



*A true and full copy of y<sup>e</sup> which was most  
imperfectly and surreptitiously printed before  
under the name of Religio Medici: the  
2<sup>d</sup> Edition Printed at London. 16*





*A true and full copy of y<sup>e</sup> which was most  
imperfectly and surreptitiously printed before  
under the name of Religio Medici: the  
2<sup>d</sup> Edition Printed at London. 16*

# RELIGIO MEDICI.

---

The Seventh Edition,  
Corrected and Amended.

---

WITH  
*ANNOTATIONS*

Never before Published,  
Upon all the obscure passages therein.

---

ALSO  
*OBSERVATIONS*

By Sir KENELM DIGBY,

Now newly added.

---

LONDON,

Printed for R. Scot, T. Bassett, J. Wright,  
R. Chiswell, 1678.

---

REFUGIO  
MEDICI.

The Seventh Edition  
Corrected and Amended.

WITH  
ANNOUCTIONS

Upon all the new cases therein.

ALSO  
OBSERVATIONS

By Sir Kenelm Digby,

Now newly added.

5  
43  
Printed for J. Sturges, F. W. ...  
L. ...

\*\*\*\*\*

*A Letter sent upon the Information of Animadversions to come forth, upon the imperfect and surreptitious Copy of Religio Medici, whilst this true one was going to Press.*

Honourable Sir,

**G**Ive your Servant, who hath ever honour'd you, leave to take notice of a Book at present in the Press, intituled (as I am informed) *Animadversions upon a Treatise lately printed under the name of Religio Medici*; hereof, I am advertised, you have descended to be the Author. Worthy Sir, permit your Servant to affirm there is contain'd therein nothing that can deserve the

A 3 Reason

Reason of your Contradictions,  
much less the Candor of your  
*Animadversions*: and to certifie  
the truth thereof, That Book  
(whereof I do acknowledge my  
self the Author) was penn'd ma-  
ny years past, and ( what can-  
not escape your apprehension)  
with no intention for the Press,  
or the least desire to oblige the  
Faith of any man to its asserti-  
ons. But what hath more espe-  
cially emboldened my Pen un-  
to you at present, is, That the  
same Piece, contrived in my  
private study and as an Exercise  
unto my self, rather than an Ex-  
ercitation for any other, having  
past from my hand under a bro-  
ken and imperfect Copy, by fre-  
quent transcription it still run  
forward into corruption, and af-  
ter the addition of some things,  
omission



omission of others, & transposition of many, without my assent or privacy, the liberty of these times committed it unto the Press; whence it issued so disguised, the Author without distinction could not acknowledge it. Having thus miscarried, within a few weeks I shall, God willing, deliver unto the Press the true & intended Original (whereof in the mean time your worthy Self may command a view;) otherwise when ever that Copy shall be extant, it will most clearly appear how far the Text hath been mistaken, and all Observations, Glosses, or Exercitations thereon, will in a great part impugn the Printer or Transcriber, rather than the Author. If after that, you shall esteem it worth

your vacant hours to discourse  
thereon, you shall but take that  
liberty which I assume my self,  
that is, freely to abound in your  
sense as I have done in my  
own. However you shall de-  
termine, you shall sufficiently  
honour me in the Vouchsafe of  
your Refute, and I oblige the  
whole World in the occasion of  
your Pen.

Norwich.  
March 3. 1642.

*Your Servant.*

T. B.

---

Worthy

Worthy Sir,

**S**peedily upon the Receipt of your Letter of the third Current, I sent to find out the Printer that Mr. Crook (who delivered me yours) told me was printing something under my name, concerning your Treatise of Religio Medici, and to forbid him any further proceeding therein; but my Servant could not meet with him; whereupon I have left with Mr. Crook a Note to that purpose, entreating him to deliver it to the Printer. I verily believe there is some mistake in the information given you, and that what is printing must be from some other Pen than mine; for such reflections as I made upon your learn'd and ingenious discourse, are so far from meriting the Press, as they can tempt no body

dy to a serious reading of them ;  
they were Notes hastily set down ,  
as I suddenly ran over your ex-  
cellent Piece, which is of so weigh-  
ty subject, and so strongly penned,  
as requireth much time, and sharp  
attention but to comprehend it ;  
whereas what I writ was the im-  
ployment but of one sitting ; and  
there was not twenty four hours  
between my receiving my Lord of  
Dorset's Letter that occasioned  
what I said, and the finishing my  
Answer to him ; and yet part of  
that time was taken up in procuring  
your Book, which he desired me to  
read, and give him an account of,  
for till then I was so unhappy as ne-  
ver to have heard of that worthy  
discourse. If that Letter ever come  
to your view, you will see the high  
valeur I set upon your great parts :  
and if it should be thought I have  
been

been something too bold in differing from your sense, I hope I shall easily obtain pardon, when it shall be considered, That his Lordship assigned it me as an Exercitation to oppose in it, for entertainment; such passages as I might judge capable thereof; wherein what liberty I took, is to be attributed to the security of a private Letter, and to my not knowing (nor my Lord's) the person whom it concerned.

But Sir, now that I am so happy as to have that knowledge, I dare assure you, that nothing shall ever issue from me but savouring of all honour, esteem, and reverence both to your self, and that worthy production of yours. If I had the vanity to give my self reputation by entering the Lists in publique with so eminent and learned a man as you are, yet I know right well, I am no  
ways



ways able to do it; it would be a  
very unequal progress: I pretend  
not to learning; those slender noti-  
ons I have, are but disjoynted pieces  
I have by chance gleaned up here and  
there. To encounter such a sinewy  
Opposite, or make Animadversions  
upon so smart a Piece as yours is,  
requireth such a solid stock and ex-  
ercise in School-learning. My su-  
perficial besprinkling will serve  
onely for a private Letter, or a fa-  
miliar discourse with Lady-auditors.  
With longing I expect the coming  
abroad of the true Copy of that Book,  
whose false and stoln one hath al-  
ready given me so much delight.  
And so assuring you I shall deem it  
a great good fortune to deserve your  
favour and friendship, I kiss your  
hand and rest

Winchester House,  
March 20. 1642.

Your most humble  
Servant,

Kenelm Digby.



To the Reader.

**C**ertainly that man were greedy of life, who should desire to live when all the world were at an end ; and he must needs be very impatient, who would repine at death in the society of all things that suffer under it. Had not almost every man suffered by the Press, or were not the tyranny thereof become universal, I had not wanted reason for complaint : but in times wherein I have lived to behold the highest perversion of that excellent invention, the Name of his Majesty defamed, the Honour of Parliament depraved, the Writings of both depravedly, anticipatively, counterfeitly imprinted ; complaints may seem ridiculous in private persons ; and men of my condition may be as incapable of affronts, as hopeles of their reparations. And truly  
had

## To the Reader.

had not the duty I owe unto the importunity of friends, and the allegiance I must ever acknowledge unto truth, prevailed with me, the inactivity of my disposition might have made these sufferings continual, and time that brings other things to light, should have satisfied me in the remedy of its oblivion. But, because things evidently false are not only printed, but many things of truth most falsely set forth, in this latter I could not but think my self engaged. For though we have no power to redress the former, yet in the other, reparation lying within our selves, I have at present represented unto the world a full and intended Copy of that Piece, which was most imperfectly and surreptitiously published before.

This I confess, about sixteen years past, with some others of affinity thereto, for my private exercise and satisfaction, I had at leisurable hours composed; which being communicated unto one, it became common unto many, and was by Transcription successively corrupted, until it arrived in a most depraved Copy at the Press. He that shall peruse that Work, and shall take

## To the Reader.

take notice of sundry particulars and personal expressions therein, will easily discern the intention was not publick: and being a private Exercise directed to my self, what is delivered therein, was rather a memorial unto me, than an Example or rule unto any other: and therefore if there be any singularity therein correspondent unto the private conceptions of any man, it doth not advantage them; or if dissentaneous thereunto, it no way overthrows them. It was penned in such a place, and with such disadvantage, that ( I protest ) from the first setting of pen unto paper, I had not the assistance of any good Book, whereby to promote my invention, or relieve my memory, and therefore there might be many real lapses therein, which others might take notice of, and more that I suspected my self. It was set down many years past, and was the sense of my conception at that time, not an immutable Law unto my advancing judgement at all times; and therefore there might be many things therein plausible unto my passed apprehension, which are not agreeable unto my present

## To the Reader.

sent self. There are many things delivered Rhetorically, many expressions therein meerly Tropical, and as they best illustrate my intention; and therefore also there are many things to be taken in a soft and flexible sense, and not to be called unto the rigid test of Reason. Lastly, all that is contained therein, is in submission unto maturer discernments; and as I have declared, shall no further father them than the best and learned judgments shall authorize them: under favour of which considerations I have made its secrecy publick, and committed the truth thereof to every Ingenuous Reader.

Tho. Browne.

RELI





ceed in the Religion of my Country : But having in my riper years and confirmed Judgment, seen and examined all, I find my self obliged by the Principles of Grace, and the Law of mine own Reason, to embrace no other Name but this : Neither doth herein my zeal so far make me forget the general Charity I owe unto Humanity, as rather to hate than pity *Turks, Infidels*, and (what is worse) *Jews* ; rather contenting my self to enjoy that happy Stile, than maligning those who refuse so glorious a Title.

*Scil. 2.*

But because the Name of a Christian is become too general to express our Faith, there being a Geography of Religion as well as Lands, and every Clime distinguished not only by their Laws and Limits, but circumscribed by their Doctrines and Rules of Faith, to be particular, I am of that Reformed new cast Religion, wherein I dislike nothing but the Name ; of the same belief our Saviour taught, the Apostles disseminated, the Fathers au-  
thori-

## *Religio Medici.*

3

thorized, and the Martyrs confirm-  
ed, but by the sinister ends of Prin-  
ces, the ambition and avarice of  
Prelates, and the fatal corruption  
of times, so decayed, impaired, and  
fallen from its native Beauty, that  
it required the careful and charita-  
ble hands of these times to restore  
it to its primitive Integrity. Now  
the accidental occasion whereupon,  
the slender means whereby the low  
and and abject condition of the Per-  
son by whom so good a work was  
set on foot, which in our Adversa-  
ries beget contempt and scorn, fills  
me with wonder, and is the very  
same Objection the insolent Pagans  
first cast at Christ and his Disci-  
ples.

Yet have I not so shaken hands *Sect. 3.*  
with those desperate Resolute<sup>ers</sup>,  
who had rather venture at large  
their decayed bottom, than bring  
her in to be new trimm'd in the  
Dock; who had rather promiscu-  
ously retain all, than abridge any,  
and obstinately be what they are,  
than what they have been, as to

stand in Diameter and Swords point with them : We have reformed from them, not against them ; for omitting those Improperations, and Terms of Scurrility betwixt us, which only difference our Affections, and not our Cause, there is between us one common Name and Appellation, one Faith and necessary body of Principles common to us both ; and therefore I am not scrupulous to converse and live with them, to enter their Churches in defect of ours, and either pray with them, or for them : I could never perceive any rational Consequence from those many Texts which prohibit the Children of *Israel* to pollute themselves with the Temples of the Heathens ; we being all Christians, and not divided by such detested impieties as might prophane our Prayers, or the place wherein we make them ; or that a resolved Conscience may not adore her Creator any where, especially in places devoted to his Service ; where if their Devotions offend him,

him, mine may please him; if theirs prophane it, mine may hollow it: Holy-water and Crucifix (dangerous to the common people) deceive not my judgment, nor abuse my devotion at all: I am, I confess, naturally inclined to that, which misguided Zeal terms Superstition: my common conversation I do acknowledge austere, my behaviour full of rigour, sometimes not without morosity; yet at my Devion I love to use the civility of my knee, my hat, and hand, with all those outward and sensible motions which may express or promote my invisible Devotion. I should violate my own arm rather than a Church, nor willingly deface the name of Saint or Martyr. At the sight of a Cross or Crucifix I can dispense with my hat, but scarce with the thought or memory of my Saviour: I cannot laugh at, but rather pity the fruitless journeys of Pilgrims, or condemn the miserable condition of Fryars; for though misplaced in Circumstances, there is something



\* A Church  
Bell that  
tolls every  
day at six  
and twelve  
of the Clock;  
at the hear-  
ing where-  
of, every one  
in what  
place soever,  
either of  
House or  
Street, be-  
takes him-  
self to his  
prayer,  
which is  
commonly  
directed to  
the Virgin.

in it of Devotion. I could never hear the \* *Ave-Mary* Bell without an elevation, or think it a sufficient warrant, because they erred in one circumstance, for me to err in all, that is, in silence and dumb contempt; whilst therefore they direct their Devotions to Her, I offered mine to God, and rectified the Errors of their Prayers, by rightly ordering mine own: At a solemn Procession I have wept abundantly, while my consorts blind with opposition and prejudice, have fallen into an excess of scorn and laughter: There are questionless both in *Greek*, *Roman*, and *African* Churches, Solemnities and Ceremonies, whereof the wiser Zeals do make a Christian use, and stand condemned by us, not as evil in themselves, but as allurements and baits of superstition to those vulgar heads that look askant on the face of Truth, and those unstable Judgments that cannot resist in the narrow point and centre of Virtue without a reel or stagger to the Circumference.

As

## *Religio Medici.*

7

As there were many Reformers, *Sect. 4.*  
so likewise many Reformations ;  
every Country proceeding in a particular way and method, according as their national Interest, together with their Constitution and Clime inclined them ; some angrily, and with extremity ; others calmly, and with mediocrity, not rending but easily dividing the community, and leaving an honest possibility of a reconciliation ; which though peaceable Spirits do desire, and may conceive that revolution of time and the mercies of God may effect, yet that judgment that shall consider the present antipathies between the two extreams, their contrarities in condition, affection and opinion, may with the same hopes expect an union in the Poles of Heaven.

But to difference my self nearer, *Sect. 5.*  
and draw into a lesser Circle: There is no Church, whose every part so squares unto my Conscience; whose Articles, Constitutions, and Customs, seem so consonant unto reason,

son, and as it were framed to my particular Devotion, as this whereof I hold my Belief, the Church of *England*, to whose Faith I am a sworn Subject; and therefore in a double Obligation subscribe unto her Articles, and endeavour to observe her Constitutions; whatsoever is beyond, as points indifferent, I observe according to the rules of my private reason, or the humour and fashion of my Devotion; neither believing this, because *Luther* affirmed it, or disproving that, because *Calvin* hath disavouched it. I condemn not all things in the Council of *Trent*, nor approve all in the Synod of *Dort*. In brief, where the Scripture is silent, the Church is my Text; where that speaks, 'tis but my Comment: where there is a joynt silence of both, I borrow not the rules of my Religion from *Rome* or *Geneva*, but the dictates of my own reason. It is an unjust scandal of our adversaries, and a gross error in our selves, to compute the Nativity of our Religion

ligion from *Henry* the Eighth, who though he rejected the Pope, refus'd not the faith of *Rome*, and effected no more than what his own Predecessors desired and assayed in Ages past, and was conceived the State of *Venice* would have attempted in our days. It is as uncharitable a point in us to fall upon those popular scurrilities and opprobrious scoffs of the Bishop of *Rome*, to whom as temporal Prince, we owe the duty of good language: I confess there is a cause of passion between us; by his sentence I stand excommunicated, Heretick is the best language he affords me; yet can no ear witness, I ever returned him the name of Antichrist, Man of sin, or Whore of *Babylon*. It is the method of Charity to suffer without reaction: Those usual Satyrs and invectives of the Pulpit may perchance produce a good effect on the vulgar, whose ears are opener to Rhetorick than Logick; yet do they in no wise confirm the faith of wiser Believers, who know  
that

that a good cause needs not to be pardon'd by passion, but can sustain it self upon a temperate dispute.

*Seci. 6.*

I could never divide my self from any man upon the difference of an opinion, or be angry with his judgment for not agreeing with me in that, from which within a few days I should dissent my self. I have no Genius to disputes in Religion, and have often thought it wisdom to decline them, especially upon a disadvantage, or when the cause of truth might suffer in the weakness of my patronage: Where we desire to be informed, 'tis good to contest with men above our selves; but to confirm and establish our opinions, 'tis best to argue with judgments below our own, that the frequent spoils and victories over their reasons, may settle in our selves an esteem and confirmed Opinion of our own. Every man is not a proper Champion for Truth, nor fit to take up the Gauntlet in the cause of Verity: Many from the ignorance of these Maximes, and  
an



an inconsiderate Zeal unto Truth, have too rashly charged the Troops of Error, and remain as Trophies unto the enemies of Truth: A man may be in as just possession of Truth as of a City, and yet be forced to surrender; 'tis therefore far better to enjoy her with peace, than to hazzard her on a battle: if therefore there rise any doubts in my way, I do forget them, or at least defer them, till my better settled judgement, and more manly reason be able to resolve them, for I perceive every mans own reason is his best *Oedipus*, and will upon a reasonable truce, find a way to loose those bonds wherewith the subtleties of error have enchained our more flexible and tender judgements. In Philosophy, where Truth seems double-fac'd, there is no man more Paradoxical than my self; but in Divinity I love to keep the Road; and though not in an implicate, yet an humble faith, follow the great wheel of the Church, by which I move, not reserving  
any

any proper Poles or motion from the Epicycle of my own brain ; by this means I have no gap for Heresie, Schismes, or Errors, of which at present I hope I shall not injure Truth to say I have no taint or tincture : I must confess my greener studies have been polluted with two or three, not any begotten in the latter Centuries, but old and obsolete, such as could never have been revived, but by such extravagant and irregular heads as mine ; for indeed Heresies perish not with their Authors, but like the River *Arethusa*, though they lose their currents in one place, they rise up again in another : One general Council is not able to extirpate one single Heresie ; it may be cancell'd for the present , but revolution of time, and the like aspects from Heaven, will restore it, when it will flourish till it be condemned again. For as though there were *Metempsychosis*, and the soul of one man passed into another ; Opinions do find after certain Revolutions, men and minds like  
like

like those that first begat them. To see our selves again, we need not look for <sup>b</sup> *Plato's* year: every man is not only himself; there hath been many *Diogenes*, and as many *Timons*, though but few of that name; men are liv'd over again, the world is now as it was in Ages past, there was none then, but there hath been some one since that Parallels him, and as it were his revived self.

<sup>b</sup> A revolution of certain thousand years, when all things should return unto their former estate, and he be teaching again in his School as when he delivered this Opinion.

Now the first of mine was that of the *Arabians*, That the Souls of men perished with their Bodies, but should yet be raised again at the last day: not that I did absolutely conceive a mortality of the Soul; but if that were, which Faith, not Philosophy hath yet thoroughly disproved, and that both entred the grave together, yet I held the same conceit thereof that we all do for the body, that it rise again. Surely it is but the merits of our unworthy Natures, if we sleep in darkness until the last Alarm. A serious reflex upon my own unworthiness did  
make

make me backward from challenging this prerogative of my Soul ; so that I might enjoy my Saviour at the last, I could with patience be nothing almost unto Eternity. The second was that of *Origen*, That God would not persist in his vengeance for ever, but after a definite time of his wrath, he would release the damned Souls from torture : which error I fell into upon a serious contemplation of the great Attribute of God, his Mercy ; and did a little cherish it in my self, because I found therein no malice, and a ready weight to sway me from the other extream of despair, whereunto Melancholy and Contemplative Natures are too easily disposed. A third there is which I did never positively maintain or practise, but have often wished it had been consonant to Truth, and not offensive to my Religion, and that is the Prayer for the dead ; whereunto I was inclin'd from some charitable inducements, whereby I could scarce contain my Prayers for a friend

friend at the ringing of a Bell, or behold his Corps without an Orison for his Soul: 'Twas a good way methought to be remembred by posterity, and far more noble than an History. These Opinions I never maintained with pertinacy, or endeavoured to enveagle any mans belief unto mine, nor so much as ever revealed or disputed them with my dearest friends; by which means I neither propagated them in others, nor confirmed them in my self; but suffering them to flame upon their own substance, without addition of new fuel, they went out insensibly of themselves: therefore these Opinions, though condemned by lawful Councels, were not Heresies in me, but bare Errors, and single Lapses of my understanding without a joynt depravity of my will: Those have not onely depraved understandings, but diseased affections, which cannot enjoy a singularity without an Heresie, or be the Author of an Opinion without they be of a Sect also; this was  
the



the Villany of the first Schism of *Lucifer*, who was not content to erre alone, but drew into his Faction many Legions, and upon this experience he tempted onely *Eve*, as well understanding the communicable nature of Sin, and that to deceive but one, was tacitely and upon consequence to delude them both.

*Scē. 8.*

That Heresies should arise, we have the Prophecie of Christ; but that old ones should be abolished, we hold no prediction. That there must be Heresies, is true, not only in our Church, but also in any other: even in the doctrines heretical, there will be super-heresies; and Arians not only divided from their Church, but also among themselves: for heads that are disposed unto Schism and complexionably propense to innovation, are naturally disposed for a community; nor will be ever confined unto the order or æconomy of one body; and therefore when they separate from others, they knit but loosely among themselves;

selves, nor contented with a general breach or dichotomy with their Church, do subdivide and mince themselves almost into Atoms. 'Tis true, that men of singular parts and humours have not been free from singular opinions and conceits in all Ages; retaining something not only beside the opinion of his own Church or any other, but also any particular Author, which notwithstanding a sober Judgment may do without offence or heresie; for there is yet, after all the Decrees of Councils, and the niceties of Schools, many things untouch'd, unimagi'd, wherein the liberty of an honest reason may play and expatiate with security, and far without the circle of an Heresie.

As for those wingy Misteries in *Sect. 9.* Divinity, and airy subtleties in Religion, which have unhing'd the brains of better heads, they never stretched the *Pia Mater* of mine; methinks there be not impossibilities enough in Religion, for an active faith; the deepest Mysteries

ours contains, have not only been illustrated, but maintained by Syllogism, and the rule of Reason : I love to lose my self in a mystery, to pursue my Reason to an *O altitudo!*

'Tis my solitary recreation to pose my apprehension with those involved *Ænigma's* and riddles of the Trinity, with Incarnation and Resurrection. I can answer all the Objections of Satan and my rebellious reason, with that odd resolution I learned of *Tertullian*, *Certum est quia impossibile est*. I desire to exercise my faith in the difficultest point ; for to credit ordinary and visible objects, is not faith, but perswasion. Some believe the better for seeing Christ's Sepulchre, and when they have seen the Red Sea, doubt not of the Miracle. Now contrarily, I bless my self, and am thankful that I lived not in the dayes of Miracles, that I never saw Christ nor his Disciples ; I would not have been one of those *Israelites* that pass'd the Red Sea, nor one of Christs patients on whom he wrought his wonders ;  
then

then had my faith been thrust upon me; nor should I enjoy that greater blessing pronounced to all that believe and saw not. 'Tis an easie and necessary belief, to credit what our eye and sense hath examined: I believe he was dead and buried, and rose again; and desire to see him in his glory, rather than to contemplate him in his Cenotaphe, or Sepulchre. Nor is this much to believe; as we have reason, we owe this faith unto History: they only had the advantage of a bold and noble Faith, who lived before his coming, who upon obscure prophecies and mystical Types could raise a belief, and expect apparent impossibilities.

'Tis true, there is an edge in all *S. d. 10.* firm belief, and with an easie Metaphor we may say the Sword of Faith; but in these obscurities I rather use it in the adjunct the Apostle gives it, a Buckler; under which I conceive a wary combatant may lye invulnerable. Since I was of understanding to  
C 2 know

*Sphæra  
ejus cen-  
trum ubi-  
que, circum-  
ferentia nul-  
libi.*

know we knew nothing, my reason hath been more pliable to the will of Faith; I am now content to understand a mystery without a rigid definition, in an easie and Platonick description. That allegorical description of *Hermes*, pleaseth me beyond all the Metaphysical definitions of Divines; where I cannot satisfie my reason, I love to humour my fancy: I had as live you tell me that *anima est angelus hominis, est Corpus Dei.* as *Entelechia*; *Lux est umbra Dei,* as *actus perspicui*; where there is an obscurity too deep for our Reason, 'tis good to fit down with a description, periphrasis, or adumbration; for by acquainting our reason how unable it is to display the visible and obvious effects of nature, it becomes more humble and submissive unto the subtleties of faith; and thus I teach my haggard and unreclaimed reason to stoop unto the lure of Faith. I believe there was already a tree whose fruit our unhappy Parents tasted, though in the same Chapter

when



when God forbids it, 'tis positively said, the plants of the fields were not yet grown; for God had not caus'd it to rain upon the earth. I believe that the Serpent (if we shall literally understand it) from his proper form and figure made his motion on his belly before the curse. I find the tryal of the Pucelage and virginity of Women, which God ordained the *Jews*, is very fallible. Experience and History informs me, that not onely many particular Women, but likewise whole Nations have escaped the curse of Childbirth, which God seems to pronounce upon the whole Sex; yet do I believe that all this is true, which indeed my Reason would perswade me to be false; and this I think is no vulgar part of Faith, to believe a thing not only above, but contrary to Reason, and against the Arguments of our proper Senses.

In my solitary and retired imagination, (*Neg; enim cum porticus, aut me lectulus accepit, desum mihi*) I

*Scilicet. I.*

remember I am not alone, and therefore forget not to contemplate him and his Attributes who is ever with me, especially those two mighty ones, his Wisdom and Eternity: with the one I recreate, with the other I confound my understanding: for who can speak of Eternity without a solæcism, or think thereof without an Extasie? Time we may comprehend: 'tis but five dayes elder then our selves, and hath the same Horoscope with the World; but to retire so far back as to apprehend a beginning, to give such an infinite start forwards as to conceive an end in an essence that we affirm hath neither the one nor the other, it puts my Reason to St. Pauls Sanctuary: my Philosophy dares not say the Angels can do it; God hath not made a Creature that can comprehend him; 'tis a privilege of his own nature: *I am that I am*, was his own definition unto Moses; and 'twas a short one, to confound mortality, that durst question God, or ask him what he was;

was; indeed he onely is ; all others have and shall be : but in Eternity there is no distinction of Tenses ; and therefore that terrible term *Predestination*, which hath troubled so many weak heads to conceive, and the wisest to explain, is in respect to God no prescious determination of our Estates to come, but a definitive blast of his Will already fulfilled, and at the instant that he first decreed it ; for to his Eternity which is indivisible, and all together, the last Trump is already sounded , the reprobates in the flame, and the blessed in *Abrahams* bosome. St. *Peter* speaks modestly, when he saith, a thousand years to God are but as one day : for to speak like a Phylosopher, those continued instances of time which flow into a thousand years, make not to him one moment ; what to us is to come, to his Eternity is present, his whole duration being but one permanent point, without Succession, Parts, Flux, or Division.

There is no Attribute that adds S. 7. 12.

more difficulty to the mystery of the Trinity, where, though in a relative way of Father and Son, we must deny a priority. I wonder how *Aristotle* could conceive the World eternal, or how he could make good two Eternities: his similitude of a Triangle, comprehended in a square, doth somewhat illustrate the Trinity of our Souls, and that the Triple Unity of God; for there is in us not three, but a Trinity of Souls, because there is in us, if not three distinct Souls, yet differing faculties, that can, and do subsist apart in different Subjects, and yet in us are thus united as to make but one Soul and substance: if one Soul were so perfect as to inform three distinct Bodies, that were a petty Trinity: conceive, the distinct number of three, not divided nor separated by the Intellect, but actually comprehended in its Unity, and that is a perfect Trinity. I have often admired the mystical way of *Pythagoras*, and the secret Magick of numbers. Beware of  
Phy-

Phylosophy, is a precept not to be received in too large a sense, for in this Mass of Nature there is a set of things that carry in their Front, though not in Capital Letters, yet in Stenography, and short Characters, something of Divinity, which to wiser Reasons serve as Luminaries in the Abyss of Knowledge, and to judicious beliefs, as Scales and Roundles to mount the Pinacles and highest pieces of Divinity. The severe Schools shall never laugh me out of the Phylosophy of *Hermes*, that this visible World is but a Picture of the invisible, wherein as in a Pourtraict, things are not truely, but in equivocal shapes, and as they counterfeit some real substance in that invisible Fabrick.

That other Attribute wherewith *Sec. 13.* I recreate my devotion, is his Wisdom, in which I am happy; and for the contemplation of this only, do not repent me that I was bred in the way of Study: The advantage I have of the vulgar, with the con-



content and happiness I conceive therein, is an ample recompence for all my endeavours, in what part of knowledge soever. Wisdom is his most beauteous Attribute, no man can attain unto it, yet *Solomon* pleased God when he desired it. He is wise, because he knows all things; and he knoweth all things, because he made them all: but his greatest knowledge is in comprehending that he made not, that is, himself. And this is also the greatest knowledge in man. For this do I honour my own profession, and embrace the counsel even of the Devil himself: had he read such a Lecture in Paradise, as he did at \* *Delphos*, we had better known our selves; nor had we stood in fear to know him. I know he is wise in all, wonderful in what we conceive, but far more in what we comprehend not; for we behold him but a squint, upon reflex or shadow; our understanding is dimmer than *Moses* Eye; we are ignorant of the back-parts or lower side of his Divinity; therefore

\* Γνωσθι  
 σε αὐτὸν,  
 Nosce te ip-  
 sum.

fore to prie into the maze of his Counfels, is not only folly in man, but presumption even in Angels; like us, they are his Servants, not his Senators; he holds no Counsel, but that myftical one of the Trinity, wherein though there be three Persons, there is but one mind that decrees without Contradiction: nor needs he any; his actions are not begot with deliberation, his Wisdom naturally knows what's best; his intellect ftands ready fraught with the Superlative and pureft *Idea's* of goodnefs; confultation and election, which are two motions in us, make but one in him; his action springing from his power, at the firft touch of his will. Thefe are Contemplations Metaphyfical: my humble fpeculations have another Method, and are content to trace and discover thofe expreffions he hath left in his Creatures, and the obvious effects of Nature; there is no danger to profoundly <sup>one</sup> thefe myfteries, no *sanctum* *sanctorum* in Phylofophy: the World was

was made to be inhabited by Beasts; but studied and contemplated by Man: 'tis the Debt of our Reason we owe unto God, and the homage we pay for not being Beasts; without this, the World is still as though it had not been, or as it was before the sixth day, when as yet there was not a Creature that could conceive, or say there was a World. The wisdom of God receives small honour from those vulgar Heads that rudely stare about, and with a gross rusticity admire his works; those highly magnifie him, whose judicious inquiry into his Acts, and deliberate research into his Creatures, return the duty of a devout and learned admiration.

Therefore,

*Search while thou wilt, and let thy reason go  
To ransom truth even to th' Abyss below;  
Rally the scattered Causes; and that line  
Which Nature twists, be able to untwine:  
It is thy Makers will, for unto none,  
But unto reason can he e're be known.  
The Devils do know thee, but those damn'd  
Meteors*

*Build*

Build not thy Glory, but confound thy Creatures.

Teach my indeavours so thy works to read,  
That learning them in thee, I may proceed,  
Give thou my reason that instructive flight,  
Whose weary wings may on thy hands still  
light.

Teach me so to soar aloft, yet ever so,  
When near the Sun, to stoop again below.  
Thus shall my humble Feathers safely bove,  
And though neer Earth, more than the Heavens discover.

And then at last, when homeward I shall drive  
Rich with the Spoils of nature to my Hive,  
There will I sit like that industrious Flie,  
Buzzing thy praises, which shall never die,  
Till death abrupts them, and succeeding Glory  
Bid me go on in a more lasting story.

And this is almost all wherein an humble Creature may endeavour to requite, and some way to retribute unto his Creator : for if not he that saith, *Lord, Lord*, but he that doth the will of his Father, shall be saved ; certainly our wills must be our performances, and our intents make out our Actions ; otherwise our pious labours shall find anxiety in our Graves, and our best endeavours

deavours not hope, but fear a resurrection.

*Scilicet.* 14.

There is but our first cause, and four second causes of all things; some are without efficient, as God; others without matter, as Angels; some without form, as the first matter: but every Essence created or uncreated, hath its final cause, and some positive end both of its Essence and Operation; this is the cause I grope after in the works of Nature; on this hangs the providence of God: to raise so beauteous a structure, as the World and the Creatures thereof, was but his Art, but their sundry and divided operations, with their predestinated ends, are from the Treasure of his wisdom. In the causes, nature and affections of the Eclipses of the Sun and Moon, there is most excellent speculation; but to profound farther, and to contemplate a reason why his providence hath so disposed and ordered their motions in that vast circle, as to conjoyn and obscure each other, is a sweeter piece



piece of Reason, and a diviner point of Philosophy; therefore sometimes, and in some things, there appears to me as much Divinity in *Galen* his Books *De usu partium*, as in *Suarez* Metaphysicks: Had *Aristotle* been as curious in the enquiry of this cause as he was of the other, he had not left behind him an imperfect piece of Philosophy, but an absolute tract of Divinity.

*Natura nihil aget frustra*, is the only indisputed Axiome in Philosophy; there are no *Grotesques* in nature; not any thing framed to fill up empty Cantons, and unnecessary spaces: in the most imperfect Creatures, and such as were not preserved in the Ark, but having their Seeds and Principles in the womb of Nature, are every where, where the power of the Sun is; in these is the wisdom of his hand discovered: Out of this rank *Solomon* chose the object of admiration; indeed what reason may not go to School to the wisdom of Bees, Ants, and Spiders? what wise hand teacheth

Sect. 15.

eth them to do what reason cannot teach us? ruder heads stand amazed at those prodigious pieces of Nature, Whales, Elephants, Dromedaries and Camels; these, I confess, are the Colossus and Majestick pieces of her hand: but in these narrow Engins there is more curious Mathematicks; and the civility of these little Citizens, more neatly sets forth the wisdom of their Maker. Who admires not *Regio Montanus* his Fly beyond his Eagle, or wonders not more at the operation of two Souls in those little Bodies, than but one in the Trunk of a Cedar? I could never content my contemplation with those general pieces of wonder, the Flux and Reflux of the Sea, the increase of *Nile*, the conversion of the Needle to the North; and have studied to match and parallel those in the more obvious and neglected pieces of Nature; which without further travel I can do in the Cosmography of my self; we carry with us the wonders we seek without us: There  
is

is all *Africa* and her prodigies in us; we are that bold and adventurous piece of nature, which he that studies wisely learns in a *compendium*, what others labour at in a divided piece and endless volume.

Thus there are two Books from whence I collect my Divinity; besides that written one of God, another of his servant Nature, that universal and publick Manuscript, that lies expans'd unto the Eyes of all, those that never saw him in the one, have discovered him in the other: this was the Scripture and Theology of the Heathens; the natural motion of the Sun made them more admire him, than its supernatural station did the Children of *Israel*; the ordinary effects of nature wrought more admiration in them, than in the other all his Miracles; surely the Heathens knew better how to joyn and read these mystical Letters, than we Christians, who cast a more careless Eye on these common Hieroglyphicks, and disdain to suck Di-

D

vinity

vinity from the flowers of Nature. Nor do I so forget God as to adore the name of Nature; which I define not with the Schools, to be the principle of motion and rest, but that streight and regular line, that settled and constant course the wisdom of God hath ordained the actions of his creatures, according to their several kinds. To make a revolution every day, is the Nature of the Sun, because of that necessary course which God hath ordained it, from which it cannot swerve, by a faculty from that voice which first did give it motion. Now this course of Nature God seldome alters or perverts, but like an excellent Artist hath so contrived his work, that with the self-same instrument, without a new creation, he may effect his obscurest designs. Thus he sweetneth the Water with a Word, preserveth the Creatures in the Ark, which the blast of his mouth might have as easily created; for God is like a skilful Geometrician, who when more easily, and with

with one stroak of his Compass he might describe or divide a right line, had yet rather do this in a circle or longer way; according to the constituted and fore-laid principles of his Art: yet this rule of his he doth sometimes pervert, to acquaint the world with his Prerogative, lest the arrogancy of our reason should question his power, and conclude he could not: and thus I call the effects of Nature the works of God, whose hand and instrument she only is; and therefore to ascribe his actions unto her, is to devolve the honour of the principal agent, upon the instrument; which if with reason we may do, then let our hammers rise up and boast they have built our houses, and our pens receive the honour of our writing. I hold there is a general beauty in the works of God, and therefore no deformity in any kind of species of creature whatsoever: I cannot tell by what Logick we call a *Toad*, a *Bear*, or an *Elephant* ugly, they being created in



those outward shapes and figures which best express those actions of their inward forms. And having past that general Visitation of God, who saw that all that he had made was good, that is, conformable to his Will, which abhors deformity, and is the rule of order and beauty; there is no deformity but in Monstrosity, wherein notwithstanding there is a kind of Beauty. Nature so ingeniously contriving the irregular parts, as they become sometimes more remarkable than the principal Fabrick. To speak yet more narrowly, there was never any thing ugly or mis-shapen, but the Chaos; wherein, notwithstanding, to speak strictly, there was no deformity, because no form, nor was it yet impregnant by the voice of God; Now nature is not at variance with Art, nor art with Nature; they being both servants of his providence: Art is the perfection of Nature: were the World now as it was the sixth day, there were yet a Chaos: Nature hath made one World,

World, and Art another. In brief, all things are artificial; for Nature is the Art of God.

This is the ordinary and open way of his providence, which Art and Industry have in a good part discovered, whose effects we may foretell without an Oracle: to fore-shew these, is not Propheſie, but Prognostication. There is another way full of Meanders and Labyrinths, whereof the Devil and Spirits have no exact Ephimerides, and that is a more particular and obscure method of his providence, directing the operations of individuals and single Essences: this we call Fortune, that serpentine and crooked line, whereby he draws those actions his wisdom intends in a more unknown and secret way: This cryptick and involved method of his providence have I ever admired, nor can I relate the history of my life, the occurrences of my days, the escapes of dangers, and hits of chance, with a *Bezo las Manas* to Fortune, or a bare Gramercy

to my good Stars: *Abraham* might have thought the *Ram* in the thicket came thither by accident; humane reason would have said, that meer chance conveyed *Moses* in the Ark to the sight of *Pharaohs* Daughter: What a Labyrinth is there in the story of *Joseph*, able to convert a Stoick? Surely there are in every mans Life certain rubs, doublings and wrenches, which pass a while under the effects of chance, but at the last well examined, prove the meer hand of God. 'Twas not dumb chance, that to discover the Fougade or Powder-plot, contrived a miscarriage in the Letter. I like the Victory of 88. the better for that one occurrence which our enemies imputed to our dishonour, and the partiality of Fortune, to wit, the tempests and contrariety of Winds. King *Philip* did not detract from the Nation, when he said, he sent his Armado to fight with men, and not to combat with the Winds. Where there is a manifest disproportion between the powers and  
forces

forces of two several agents, upon a Maxime of reason we may promise the Victory to the Superiour ; but when unexpected accidents slip in, and unthought of occurrences intervene, these must proceed from a power that owes no obedience to those Axioms ; where, as in the writing upon the wall, we may behold the hand, but see not the spring that moves it. The success of that petty Province of *Holland* (of which the Grand *Seignour* proudly said, If they should trouble him as they did the *Spaniard*, he would send his men with shovels and pick-axes, and throw it into the Sea) I cannot altogether ascribe to the ingenuity and industry of the people, but the mercy of God, that hath disposed them to such a thriving Genius ; and to the will of his Providence, that disposeth her favour to each Country in their pre-ordinate season. All cannot be happy at once ; for because the glory of one State depends upon the ruine of another, there is a revolution and vicissitude

of their greatness, and must obey the swing of that wheel, not moved by Intelligences, but by the hand of God, whereby all Estates arise to their *Zenith* and Vertical points, according to their predestinated periods. For the lives, not only of men, but of Commonwealths, and the whole World, run not upon an Helix that still enlargeth; but on a Circle, where arriving to their Meridian, they decline in obscurity, and fall under the Horizon again.

*Secl. 18.*

These must not therefore be named the effects of Fortune, but in a relative way, and as we term the works of Nature: it was the ignorance of mans reason that begat this very name, and by a careless term miscalled the Providence of God; for there is no liberty for causes to operate in a loose and stragling way; nor any effect whatsoever, but hath its warrant from some universal or superiour Cause. 'Tis not a ridiculous devotion to say a prayer before a game at Tables; for  
even



even in *fortilgies* and matters of greatest uncertainty, there is a settled and pre-ordered course of effects. It is we that are blind, not Fortune : because our Eye is too dim to discover the mystery of her effects, we foolishly paint her blind, and hoodwink the Providence of the Almighty. I cannot justify that contemptible Proverb, *That fools only are Fortunate* ; or that insolent Paradox, *That a wise man is out of the reach of Fortune* ; much less those opprobrious Epithets of Poets, *Whore, Bawd, and Strumpet*. 'Tis, I confess, the common fate of men of singular gifts of mind, to be destitute of those of Fortune ; which doth not any way deject the Spirit of wiser judgements, who thoroughly understand the justice of this proceeding ; and being enrich'd with higher donatives, cast a more careless eye on these vulgar parts of felicity. It is a most unjust ambition to desire to engross the mercies of the Almighty, not to be content with the goods of mind, without  
a pos-

a possession of those of body or Fortune : and it is an error worse than heresie, to adore these complemental and circumstantial pieces of felicity, and undervalue those perfections and essential points of happiness, wherein we resemble our Maker. To wiser desires it is satisfaction enough to deserve, though not to enjoy the favours of Fortune; let Providence provide for Fools; 'tis not partiality, but equity in God, who deals with us but as our natural Parents; those that are able of Body and Mind, he leaves to their deserts; to those of weaker merits he imparts a larger portion, and pieces out the defect of one, by the access of the other. Thus have we no just quarrel with Nature, for leaving us naked; or to envy the Horns, Hoofs, Skins and Furs of other Creatures, being provided with Reason, that can supply them all. We need not labour with so many Arguments to confute Judicial Astrology; for if there be a truth therein, it doth not injure Divinity:  
if

if to be born under *Mercury* disposeth us to be witty, under *Jupiter* to be wealthy ; I do not owe a Knee unto these, but unto that merciful Hand that hath ordered my indifferent and uncertain nativity unto such benevolous Aspects. Those that hold that all things are governed by Fortune, had not erred, had they not persisted there : The *Romans* that erected a Temple to Fortune, acknowledged therein, though in a blinder way, somewhat of Divinity ; for in a wise supputation all things begin and end in the Almighty. There is a nearer way to Heaven than *Homers* Chain ; an easie Logick may conjoyn Heaven and Earth, in one Argument, and with less than a *Sorites* resolve all things into God. For though we christen effects by their most sensible and nearest Causes, yet is God the true and infallible Cause of all, whose concurrence though it be general, yet doth it subdivide it self into the particular Actions of every thing, and is that Spirit, by which  
each

each singular Essence not only subsists, but performs its operation.

*Señ. 19.*

The bad construction, and perverse comment on these pair of second Causes, or visible hands of God, have perverted the Devotion of many unto Atheism; who forgetting the honest Advisers of Faith, have listened unto the conspiracy of Passion and Reason. I have therefore always endeavoured to compose those Feuds and angry Dissensions between Affection, Faith and Reason; For there is in our Soul a kind of Triumvirate, or triple Government of three Competitors, which distract the Peace of this our Common-wealth, not less than did that other the State of *Rome*.

As Reason is a Rebel unto Faith, so Passion unto Reason: As the Propositions of Faith seem absurd unto Reason, so the Theorems of Reason unto Passion, and both unto Reason; yet a moderate and peaceable discretion may so state and order the matter, that they may be

be all Kings, and yet make but one Monarchy, every one exercising his Sovereignty and Prerogative in a due time and place, according to the restraint and limit of circumstance. There is, as in Philosophy, so in Divinity, sturdy doubts, and boisterous Objections, wherewith the unhappiness of our knowledge too nearly acquainteth us. More of these no man hath known than my self, which I confess I conquered, not in a martial posture, but on my Knees. For our endeavours are not only to combat with doubts, but always to dispute with the Devil: the villany of that Spirit takes a hint of Infidelity from our Studies, and by demonstrating a naturalty in one way, makes us mistrust a miracle in another. Thus having perused the *Archidoxes*, and read the secret Sympathies of things, he would dissuade my belief from the miracle of the Brazen Serpent, make me conceit that Image worked by Sympathy, and was but an *Aegyptian* trick to cure their Diseases with-



without a miracle. Again, having seen some experiments of *Bitumens*, and having read far more of *Naphtha*, he whispered to my curiosity the fire of the Altar might be natural; and bid me mistrust a miracle in *Elias*, when he entrenched the Altar round with Water: for that inflammable substance yields not easily unto Water, but flames in the Arms of its Antagonist. And thus would he inveigle my belief to think the combustion of *Sodom* might be natural, and that there was an Asphaltick and Bituminous nature in that Lake before the Fire of *Gomorrhah*. I know that *Manna* is now plentifully gathered in *Calabria*; and *Josephus* tells me, in his days it was as plentiful in *Arabia*; the Devil therefore made the *querre*, Where was then the miracle in the days of *Moses*: the *Israelite* saw but that in his time, the Natives of those Countries behold in ours. Thus the Devil played at Chess with me, and yielding a Pawn, thought to gain a Queen of me, taking

king advantage of my honest endeavours ; and whilst I laboured to raise the structure of my Reason, he strived to undermine the edifice of my Faith.

Neither had these or any other *Sect.* 20. ever such advantage of me, as to incline me to any point of Infidelity or desperate positions of Atheism ; for I have been these many years of opinion there was never any. Those that held Religion was the difference of Man from Beasts, have spoken probably, and proceed upon a principle as inductive as the other. That doctrine of *Epicurus*, that denied the Providence of God, was no Atheism, but a magnificent and high strained conceit of his Majesty, which he deemed too sublime to mind the trivial Actions of those inferior Creatures. That fatal necessity of the Stoicks, is nothing but the immutable Law of his will. Those that heretofore denied the Divinity of the Holy Ghost, have been condemned, but as Hereticks ; and those that now deny our Saviour

our

our (though more than Hereticks) are not so much as Atheists: for though they deny two persons in the Trinity, they hold as we do, there is but one God.

That Villain and Secretary of Hell, that composed that miscreant piece of the three Impostors, though divided from all Religions, and was neither Jew, Turk nor Christian, was not a positive Atheist. I confess every Country hath its *Machiavel*, every Age its *Lucian*, whereof common Heads must not hear, nor more advanced Judgments too rashly venture on: It is the Rhetorick of Satan, and may pervert a loose or prejudicate belief.

*Sec. 22.*

I confess I have perused them all, and can discover nothing that may startle a discreet belief, yet are their heads carried off with the Wind and breath of such motives. I remember a Doctor in Physick of *Italy*, who could perfectly believe the immortality of the Soul, because *Galen* seemed to make a doubt thereof. With another I was familiarly acquainted.

quainted in *France*, a Divine, and  
a man of singular parts, that on the  
same point was so plunged and gra-  
velled with \* three lines of *Seneca*, \* *Post Mor-*  
that all our Antidotes, drawn from *tem nihil*  
both Scripture and Philosophy, could *est, ipsaque*  
not expel the poyson of his error. *Mors nihil.*  
There are a set of Heads, that can *Mors indi-*  
credit the relations of Mariners, yet *vidua est*  
question the Testimonies of *St. Paul*; *noxia cor-*  
and peremptorily maintain the tra- *pore, nec pa-*  
ditions of *Ælian* or *Pliny*; yet in *tiens ani-*  
Histories of Scripture raile Queries *ma---Toti*  
and Objections, believing no more *morimur,*  
than they can parallel in humane *nullaque*  
Authors. I confess there are in *pars manet*  
Scripture Stories that do exceed the *nostri.*  
Fables of Poets, and to a captious  
Reader sound like *Garagantua* or  
*Bevis*: Search all the Legends of  
times past, and the fabulous con-  
ceits of these present, and 'twill be  
hard to find one that deserves to  
carry the Buckler unto *Sampson*, yet  
is all this of an easie possibility, if  
we conceive a divine concurrence, or  
an influence from the little Finger  
of the Almighty. It is impossible  
E that

that either in the discourse of man, or in the infallible Voice of God, to the weakness of our apprehensions, there should not appear irregularities, contradictions, and antinomies: my self could shew a Catalogue of doubts, never yet imagined nor questioned, as I know, which are not resolved at the first hearing; not fantastick Queries or Objections of Air; for I cannot hear of Atoms in Divinity. I can read the History of the Pigeon that was sent out of the Ark, and returned no more, yet not question how she found out her Mate that was left behind: That *Lazarus* was raised from the dead, yet not demand where in the interim his Soul awaited; or raise a Law-case, whether his Heir might lawfully detain his inheritance bequeathed unto him by his death, and he, though restored to life, have no Plea or Title unto his former possessions. Whether *Eve* was framed out of the left side of *Adam*, I dispute not; because I stand not yet assured which is the right side  
of



of a man ; or whether there be any such distinction in Nature : that she was edified out of the Rib of *Adam*, I believe, yet raise no question who shall arise with that Rib at the Resurrection: Whether *Adam* was an Hermaphrodite, as the Rabbins contend upon the Letter of the Text, because it is contrary to reason, there should be an Hermaphrodite, before there was a Woman ; or a composition of two Natures, before there was a second composed. Likewise , \* whether the World was created in Autumn, Summer, or the Spring ] because it was created in them all ; for whatsoever Sign the Sun possesseth, those four Seasons are actually existent : It is the Nature of this Luminary to distinguish the several Seasons of the year , all which it makes at one time in the whole Earth, and successively in any part thereof. There are a bundle of curiosities , not only in Philosophy, but in Divinity, proposed and discussed by men of most supposed

In Rabbe-  
lais.

Sett. 22.

abilities, which indeed are not worthy our vacant hours, much less our serious Studies. Pieces only fit to be placed in *Pantagruels* Library, or bound up with *Tartaretus de modo Cacandi*.

These are niceties that become not those that peruse so serious a Mystery: There are others more generally questioned and called to the Bar, yet methinks of an easie and possible truth.

'Tis ridiculous to put off, or down the general Flood of *Noah*, in that particular inundation of *Deucalion*: ] that there was a Deluge once, seems not to me so great a Miracle, as that there is not one always. || How all the kinds of Creatures, not only in their own bulks, but with a competency of food and sustenance, might be preserved in one Ark, and within the extent of three hundred Cubits, to a reason that rightly examines, it will appear very feasible. ] There is another secret not contained in the Scripture, which is more hard

to

to comprehend, \* and put the honest Father to the refuge of a Miracle; ] and that is, not only how the distinct pieces of the World, and divided Islands should be first planted by men, but inhabited by Tigers, Panthers, and Bears. How *America* abounded with Beasts of prey, and noxious Animals, yet contained not in it that necessary Creature, a Horse, is very strange. By what passage those, not only Birds, but dangerous and unwelcome Beasts came over: How there be Creatures there, (which are not found in this Triple Continent;) all which must needs be strange unto us, that hold but one Ark, and that the Creatures began their progress from the Mountains of *Ararat*: They who to salve this would make the Deluge particular, proceed upon a principle that I can no way grant; not only upon the negative of holy Scriptures, but of mine own Reason, whereby I can make it probable, that the World was as well peopled in the time of

*Noah*, as in ours ; \* and fifteen hundred years to people the World, as full a time for them, as four thousand years since have been to us. ] There are other assertions and common Tenents drawn from Scripture, and generally believed as Scripture, whereunto notwithstanding, I would never betray the liberty of my Reason. 'Tis a Paradox to me, || that *Methusalem* was the longest liv'd of all the Children of *Adam* ] and no man will be able to prove it; when from the process of the Text, I can manifest it may be otherwise. \* That *Judas* perished by hanging himself, there is no certainty in Scripture: though in one place it seems to affirm it, and by a doubtful word hath given occasion to translate it; yet in another place, in a more punctual description, it makes it improbable, and seems to overthrow it. ] That our Fathers, after the Flood, erected the Tower of *Babel*, to preserve themselves against a second Deluge, is generally opinioned and believed, yet

yet is there another intention of theirs expressed in Scripture: Besides, it is improbable from the circumstance of the place, that is, a plain in the Land of *Shinar*: These are no points of Faith, and therefore may admit a free dispute. There are yet others, and those familiarly conclude from the Text, wherein (under favour) I see no consequence: The Church of *Rome*, confidently proves the opinion of Tutelary Angels, from that Answer when *Peter* knockt at the Door; 'Tis not he, but his Angel; that is, might some say, his Messenger, or some body from him; for so the Original signifies; and is as likely to be the doubtful Families meaning. This exposition I once suggested to a young Divine, that answered upon this point; to which I remember the *Franciscan* Opponent replied no more; but, That it was a new, and no authentic interpretation.

These are but the conclusions and *Señ. 23.*  
fallible discourses of man upon the



Word of God, for such I do believe the holy Scriptures; yet were it of man, I could not chuse but say, it was the singularest, and superlative piece that hath been extant since the Creation; were I a Pagan, I should not refrain the Lecture of it; \* and cannot but commend the judgment of *Ptolomy*,] that thought not his Library compleat without it. || The Alcoran of the *Turks* (I speak without prejudice) is an ill composed Piece, containing in it vain and ridiculous Errors in Philosophy ] impossibilities, fictions, and vanities beyond laughter, maintained by evident and open Sophisms, the Policy of Ignorance, deposition of Universities, and banishment of Learning; that hath gotten Foot by Arms and violence: This without a blow, hath disseminated it self through the whole Earth. It is not unremarkable what *Philo* first observed, That the Law of *Moses* continued two thousand years without the least alteration; whereas, we see, the Laws  
of

of other Common-weals do alter with occasions ; and even those, that pretended their Original from some Divinity , to have vanished without trace or memory. \* I believe besides *Zoroaster*, there were divers that writ before *Moses* ] who, notwithstanding have suffered the common fate of time. Mens Works have an age like themselves; and though they out-live their Authors, yet have they a stint and period to their duration: This only is a work too hard for the teeth of time, and cannot perish but in the general Flames , when all things shall confess their Ashes.

I have heard some with deep *Señ. 24.* sighs lament the lost lines of *Cicero*; Others with as many groans deplore the combustion of the Library of *Alexandria*: ] for my own part, I think there be too many in the World, and could with patience behold the urn and ashes of the *Vatican*, could I, with a few others, recover the perished leaves of *Solomon*. \* I would not omit a Copy of

✕ *Pineda*  
in his *Mo-*  
*narchica*  
*Ecclesiasti-*  
*ca* quotes  
one thou-  
sand and  
forty Au-  
thors.

of *Enoch's* Pillars, had they many nearer Authors than *Josephus*] or did not relish somewhat of the Fable. Some men have written more than others have spoken; \* *Pineda* quotes more Authors in one work, than are necessary in a whole World. || Of those three great inventions in *Germany*, there are two which are not without their incommodities,] and 'tis disputable whether they exceed not their use & commodities.

'Tis not a melancholy *Utinam* of my own, but the desires of better heads, that there were a general Synod; not to unite the incompatible difference of Religion, but for the benefit of learning. to reduce it as it lay at first, in a few, and solid Authors; and to condemn to the fire those swarms and millions of *Rhapsodies* begotten only to distract and abuse the weaker judgements of

Señ. 25. Scholars, and to maintain the trade and mystery of *Typographers*.

I cannot but wonder with what exception the *Samaritans* could confine their belief to the *Pentateuch*, or five Books of *Moses*. I am ashamed

med at the Rabbinical Interpretation of the Jews, upon the Old Testament, as much as their defection from the New. And truly it is beyond wonder, how that contemptible and degenerate issue of *Jacob*, once so devoted to Ethnick Superstition, and so easily seduced to the Idolatry of their Neighbours, should now in such an obstinate and peremptory belief adhere unto their own Doctrine, expect impossibilities, and in the face and eye of the Church, persist without the least hope of Conversion. This is a vice in them, that were a vertue in us; for obstinacy in a bad Cause, is but constancy in a good. And herein I must accuse those of my own Religion; for there is not any of such a fugitive Faith, such an unstable belief, as a Christian; none that do so oft transform themselves, not unto several shapes of Christianity and of the same Species, but unto more unnatural and contrary Forms, of Jew and Mahometan; that from the name of Saviour, can condescend to the bare term

term of Prophet ; and from an old belief that he is come, fall to a new expectation of his coming. It is the promise of Christ to make us all one Flock ; but how and when this Union shall be, is as obscure to me as the last day. Of those four Members of Religion we hold a slender proportion ; there are , I confess, some new additions, yet small to those which accrew to our Adversaries, and those only drawn from the revolt of Pagans, men but of negative Impieties, and such as deny Christ, but because they never heard of him: but the Religion of the Jew is expressly against the Christian , and the Mahometan against both. For \* the Turk, in the bulk he now stands, he is beyond all hope of conversion,] if he fall asunder, there may be conceived hopes, but not without strong improbabilities. The Jew is obstinate in all fortunes ; the persecution of fifteen hundred years hath but confirmed them in their Error: they have already endured  
what,

whatsoever may be inflicted, and have suffered, in a bad cause, even to the condemnation of their enemies. Persecution is a bad and indirect way to plant Religion ; It hath been the unhappy method of angry Devotions, not only to confirm honest Religion, but wicked Heresies, and extravagant Opinions. It was the first stone and Basis of our Faith, \* none can more justly boast of Persecutions, and glory in the number and valour of Martyrs; ] For, to speak properly, those are true and almost only examples of fortitude : Those that are fetch'd from the field, or drawn from the actions of the Camp, are not oft-times so truly precedents of valour as audacity, and at the best attain but to some bastard-piece of fortitude : || If we shall strictly examine the circumstances and requisites which *Aristotle* requires to true and perfect valour, we shall find the name only in his Master *Alexander*, and as little in that Roman Worthy, *Julius Caesar*; ] and  
if



if any, in that easie and active way, have done so nobly as to deserve that name, yet in the passive and more terrible piece these have surpassed, and in a more heroical way may claim the honour of that Title. 'Tis not in the power of every honest Faith to proceed thus far, or pass to Heaven through the flames; every one hath it not in that full measure, nor in so audacious and resolute a tempter, as to endure those terrible tests and trials; who notwithstanding in a peaceable way do truly adore their Saviour, and have (no doubt) a Faith acceptable in the eyes of God.

*S. 2. 26.* Now as all that die in the War are not termed Souldiers; so neither can I properly term all those that suffer in matters of Religion, Martyrs. \* The Council of *Constance* condemns *John Hus* for an Heretick; the Stories of his own Party stile him a Martyr:] He must needs offend the Divinity of both, that says he was neither the one nor the other: There are many  
(que-

(questionless) canonized on earth, that shall never be Saints in Heaven; and have their names in Histories and Martyrologies, who in the eyes of God are not so perfect Martyrs, as was \* that wise Heathen *Socrates*, that suffered on a fundamental point of Religion, the Unity of God. ] \* I have often pitied the miserable Bishop that suffered in the cause of *Antipodes*, ] yet cannot chuse but accuse him of as much madness, for exposing his living on such a trifle; as those of ignorance and folly, that condemned him. I think my conscience will not give me the lye, if I say there are not many extant that in a noble way fear the face of death less than my self; yet from the moral duty I owe to the Commandment of God, and the natural respects that I tender unto the conservation of my essence and being, I would not perish upon a Ceremony, Politick points, or indifferency: nor is my belief of that untractible temper, as not to bow at their obstacles, or connive  
at

at matters wherein there are not manifest impieties : The leaven therefore and ferment of all , not only Civil, but Religious actions, is Wisdom ; without which, to commit our selves to the flames, is Homicide, and (I fear) but to pass through one fire into another.

*Sett. 27.*

That Miracles are ceased, I can neither prove, nor absolutely deny, much less define the time and period of their cessation : that they survived Christ, is manifest upon the Record of Scripture ; that they out-lived the Apostles also, and were revived at the Conversion of Nations, many years after, we cannot deny, if we shall not question those Writers whose testimonies we do not controvert ; in points that make for our own opinions ; therefore that may have some truth in it that is reported by the Jesuites of their Miracles in the *Indies*, I could wish it were true, or had any other testimony than their own Pens. They may easily believe those Miracles abroad, who daily conceive a great-

greater at home, the transmutation of those visible elements into the body and blood of our Saviour: for the conversion of Water into Wine, which he wrought in *Cana*, or what the Devil would have had him done in the Wilderness, of Stones into Bread, compared to this, will scarce deserve the name of a Miracle. Though indeed, to speak properly, there is not one Miracle greater than another, they being the extraordinary effects of the Hand of God, to which all things are of an equal facility; and to create the World as easie as one single Creature. For this is also a Miracle, not onely to produce effects against, or above Nature, but before Nature; and to create Nature as great a Miracle, as to contradict or transcend her. We do too narrowly define the Power of God, restraining it to our capacities. \* I hold that God can do all things; how he should work contradictions I do not understand, yet dare not therefore deny. || I cannot see why the Angel of God should question *Esdra* to recal the time past, if it

F

were

were beyond his own power ; or that God should pose mortality in that, which he was not able to perform himself. I will not say God cannot, but he will not perform many things, which we plainly affirm he cannot : this I am sure is the mannerliest proposition, wherein, notwithstanding, I hold no Paradox. For strictly his power is the same with his will, and they both with all the rest do make but one God.

*Señ. 28.*

Therefore that Miracles have been, I do believe ; that they may yet be wrought by the living, I do not deny : but have no confidence in those which are fathered on the dead, and this hath ever made me suspect the efficacy of reliques, to examine the bones, question the habits and appurtenances of Saints, and even of Christ himself. I cannot conceive why the Cross that *Helena* found, and whereon Christ himself dyed, should have power to restore others unto life : \* I excuse not *Constantine* from a fall off his Horse, or a mischief from his enemies, upon the wearing those nails] on his bridle, which our Saviour

our

our bore upon the Cross in his hands: I compute among *Pie fraudes*, nor many degrees before consecrated Swords and Roses, that which *Baldwyn* King of *Jerusalem* return'd the *Genovese* for their cost and pains in his War, to wit, the ashes of *John* the Baptist. Those that hold the sanctity of their souls doth leave behind a tincture and sacred faculty on their bodies, speak naturally of Miracles, and do not salve the doubt. Now one reason I tender so little Devotion unto Reliques is, I think, the slender and doubtful respect I have always held unto Antiquities: for that indeed which I admire is far before Antiquity; that is, Eternity, and that is God himself; who though he be styled the ancient of days, cannot receive the adjunct of Antiquity, who was before the World, and shall be after it, yet is not older than it; for in his years there is no Climacter; his duration is Eternity, and far more venerable than Antiquity.

\* But above all things I wonder how the curiosity of wiser heads could pass that great and indisputable

Sect. 29.



table Miracle, the cessation of Oracles;] and in what swoon their Reasons lay, to content themselves, and sit down with such a far-fetch'd and ridiculous reason as *Plutarch* alleadgeth for it. The Jews that can believe the supernatural Solstice of the Sun in the days of *Joshua*, have yet the impudence to deny the Eclipse, which every Pagan confessed, at his death: but for this, it is evi-

\* In his O-  
racle to  
*Augustus*.

dent beyond all contradiction, \* the Devil himself confessed it. Certainly it is not a warrantable curiosity, to examine the verity of Scripture by the concordance of humane history, or seek to confirm the Chronicle of *Hester* or *Daniel*, by the authority of *Magasthenes* or *Herodotus*. I confess I have had an unhappy curiosity this way, \* till I laughed my self out of it with a piece of *Justine*, where he delivers that the Children of *Israel* for being scabbed were banished out of *Egypt*.] And truly since I have understood the occurrences of the world, and know in what counterfeit shapes, and deceitful vizards times present represent on the stage things

things past; I do believe them little more then things to come. Some have been of my opinion, and endeavoured to write the History of their own lives; wherein *Moses* hath outgone them all, and left not onely the story of his life, but as some will have it, of his death also.

It is a riddle to me, how this story *Señ. 30.* of Oracle hath not worm'd out of the world that doubtful conceit of Spirits and Witches; how so many learned heads should so far forget their Metaphysicks, and destroy the ladder and scale of creatures, as to question the existence of Spirits: for my part, \* I have ever believed, and do now know, that there are Witches: ] they that doubt of these, do not onely deny them, but spirits; and are obliquely, and upon consequence a sort not of Infidels, but Atheists. Those that to confute their incredulity desire to see apparitions, shall questionless never behold any, || nor have the power to be so much as Witches: ] the Devil hath them already in a heresie as capital as Witchcraft; and to appear to them,

were but to convert them. Of all the delusions wherewith he deceives mortality, there is not any that puzzleth me more than the Legerdemain of *Changelings*; I do not credit those transformations of reasonable creatures into beasts, or that the Devil hath a power to transpeciate a man into a horse, who tempted Christ (as a trial of his Divinity) to convert but stones into bread. I could believe that Spirits use with man the act of carnality, and that in both sexes; I conceive they may assume, steal, or contrive a body, wherein there may be action enough to content decrepit lust, or passion to satisfie more active veneries; yet in both, without a possibility of generation: and therefore that opinion that Antichrist should be born of the Tribe of \**Dan*, by conjunction with the Devil,] is ridiculous, and a conceit fitter for a Rabbin than a Christian. I hold that the Devil doth really possess some men, the spirit of Melancholy others, the spirit of Delusion others; that as the Devil is concealed and denyed by some, so  
God

God and good Angels are pretended by others, whereof the late defection of the Maid of *Germany* hath left a pregnant example.

Again, I believe that all that use *Sect. 31.* forceries, incantations, and spells, are not Witches, or as we term them, Magicians; I conceive there is a traditional Magick, not learned immediately from the Devil, but at second hand from his Scholars, who having once the secret betrayed, are able, and do emperically practise without his advice, they proceeding upon the principles of Nature, where actives aptly conjoyned to disposed passives, will under any Master produce their effects. Thus I think at first a part of Philosophy was Witchcraft, which being afterward derived to one another, proved but Philosophy, and was indeed no more but the honest effects of Nature: What invented by us is Philosophy, learned from him is Magick. We do surely owe the discovery of many secrets to the discovery of good and bad Angels. I could never pass that sentence of *Paracelsus*, without an

\* Thereby  
is meant  
our good  
Angel ap-  
pointed us  
from our  
Nativity.

afterisk, or annotation ; \* *Ascendens  
constellatum multa revelat, quaren-  
tibus magnalia natura, i. e. opera Dei,*

I do think that many mysteries ascribed to our own inventions, have been the courteous revelations of Spirits ; for those noble essences in Heaven bear a friendly regard unto their fellow Nature on Earth ; and therefore believe that those many prodigies and ominous prognosticks, which fore-run the ruines of States, Princes, and private persons, are the charitable premonitions of good Angels, which more careless enquiries term but the effects of chance and nature.

Secl. 32.

Now besides these particular and divided Spirits, there may be (for ought I know) an universal and common Spirit to the whole World. It was the opinion of *Plato*, and it is yet of the *Hermetical* Philosophers : if there be a common nature that unites and tyes the scattered and divided individuals into one species, why may there not be one that unites them all ? However, I am sure there is a common Spirit that plays within

within us, yet makes no part in us ;  
and that is the Spirit of God, the  
fire and scintillation of that noble  
and mighty Essence, which is the  
life and radical heat of spirits, and  
those essences that know not the  
vertue of the Sun, a fire quite con-  
trary to the fire of Hell : This is  
that gentle heat that brooded on the  
waters, and in six days hatched the  
World ; this is that irradiation that  
dispels the mists of Hell, the clouds  
of horreur, fear, sorrow, despair ; and  
preserves the region of the mind in  
serenity : whatsoever feels not the  
warm gale, and gentle ventilation of  
this Spirit, (though I feel his pulse) I  
dare not say he lives ; for truely  
without this, to me there is no heat  
under the Tropick ; nor any light,  
though I dwelt in the body of the  
Sun.

*As when the labouring Sun hath wrought his  
Up to the top of lofty Cancers back, (track  
The ycie Ocean cracks, the frozen pole  
Thaws with the heat of the Celestial coale ;  
So when thy absent beams begin t' impart  
Again a Solstice on my frozen heart,*

*My*



*My winter's ov'r ; my drooping spirits sing,  
 And every part revives into a Spring.  
 But if thy quickning beams a while decline,  
 And with their light bless not this Orb of mine,  
 A chilly frost surprizeth every member,  
 And in the midst of June I feel December.  
 O how this earthly temper doth debase  
 The noble soul, in this her humble place.  
 Whose wingy nature ever doth aspire  
 To reach that place whence first it took its fire.  
 These flames I feel, which in my heart do dwell,  
 Are not thy beams, but take their fire from Hell ;  
 O quench them all, and let thy light divine  
 Be as the Sun to this poor Orb of mine ;  
 And to thy sacred Spirit convert those fires,  
 Whose earthly fumes choak my devout aspires.*

*Señ. 33.*

Therefore for Spirits, I am so far  
 from denying their existence, that I  
 could easily believe, that not onely  
 whole Countries, but particular per-  
 sons have their Tutelary and Guar-  
 dian Angels : \* It is not a new opi-  
 nion of the Church of *Rome*, but an  
 old one of *Pythagoras* and *Plato* ; ]  
 there is no heresie in it, and if not  
 manifestly defin'd in Scripture, yet  
 is an opinion of a good and whole-  
 some use in the course and actions of  
 a mans life, and would serve as an  
*Hypothesis* to salve many doubts,  
 whereof

whereof common Philosophy affordeth no solution. Now if you demand my opinion and Metaphysicks of their natures, I confess them very shallow, most of them in a negative way, like that of God; or in a comparative, between our selves and fellow-creatures; for there is in this Universe a Stair, or manifest Scale of creatures, rising not disorderly, or in confusion, but with a comely method and proportion. Between creatures of meer existence and things of life, there is a large disproportion of nature; between plants and animals of creatures of sense, a wider difference; between them and man, a far greater: and if the proportion hold one, between Man and Angels there should be yet a greater. We do not comprehend their natures, who retain the first definition of *Prophry*, and distinguish them from our selves by immortality; for before his Fall, 'tis thought, Man also was Immortal; yet must we needs affirm that he had a different essence from the Angels; having therefore no certain knowledge of their Natures, 'tis no  
bad

bad method of the Schools, whatsoever perfection we find obscurely in our selves, in a more compleat and absolute way to ascribe unto them. I believe they have an extemporary knowledge, and upon the first motion of their reason do what we cannot without study or deliberation ; that they know things by their forms, and define by specifical difference what we describe by accidents and properties ; and therefore probabilities to us may be demonstrations unto them : that they have knowledge not onely of the specifical, but numerical forms of individuals, and understand by what reserved difference each single *Hypostasis*, (besides the relation to its species) becomes its numerical self. That as the Soul hath a power to move the body it informs, so there's a faculty to move any, though inform none ; ours upon restraint of time, place, and distance ; but that invisable hand that conveyed *Habakkuk* to the Lyons Den, or *Philip* to *Azotus*, infringeth this rule, and hath a secret conveyance, wherewith mortality

talities is not acquainted: if they have that intuitive knowledge, whereby as in reflexion they behold the thoughts of one another, I cannot peremptorily deny but they know a great part of ours. They that to refute the Invocation of Saints, have denied that they have any knowledge of our affairs below, have proceeded too far, and must pardon my opinion, till I can thoroughly answer that piece of Scripture, *At the conversion of a sinner the Angels in Heaven rejoyce.* \* I cannot with those in that great Father securely interpret the work of the first day, *Fiat lux*, to the creation of Angels,] though (I confess) there is not any creature that hath so neer a glympe of their nature, as light in the Sun and Elements. We stile it a bare accident, but || where it subsists alone, 'tis a spiritual Substance, and may be an Angel:] in brief, conceive light invisible, and that is a Spirit.

These are certainly the Magisterial and master-pieces of the Creator, the Flower or (as we may say) the best part of nothing, actually existing

Sect. 34.

ing, what we are but in hopes, and probability ; we are onely that amphibious piece between a corporal and spiritual Essence, that middle form that links those two together, and makes good the Method of God and Nature, that jumps not from extreams, but unites the incompatible distances by some middle and participating natures : that we are the breath and similitude of God, it is indisputable, and upon record of holy Scripture ; but to call our selves a Microcosm, or little world, I thought it onely a pleasant trope of Rhetorick, till my neer judgement and second thoughts told me there was a real truth therein ; for first we are a rude mass, and in the rank of creatures, which onely are, and have a dull kind of being not yet priviledged with life, or preferred to sense or reason ; next we live the life of Plants, the life of Animals, the life of Men, and at last the life of Spirits, running on in one mysterious nature those five kinds of existences, which comprehend the creatures not onely of the world, but of the Universe ;

verse ; thus is man that great and true *Amphibium*, whose nature is disposed to live not onely like other creatures in divers elements, but in divided and distinguished worlds: for though there be but one to sense, there are two to reason ; the one visible, the other invisible, whereof *Moses* seems to have left description, and of the other so obscurely, that some parts thereof are yet in controversy. And truly for the first chapters of *Genesis*, I must confess a great deal of obscurity ; though Divines have to the power of humane reason endeavoured to make all go in a literal meaning, yet those allegorical interpretations are also probable, and perhaps the mystical method of *Moses* bred up in the Hieroglyphical Schools of the *Egyptians*.

Now for that immaterial world, me thinks we need not wander so far as beyond the first moveable ; for even in this material Fabrick the spirits walk as freely exempt from the affection of time, place, and motion, as beyond the extremest circumference : do but extract from the



the corpulency of bodies, or resolve things beyond their first matter, and you discover the habitation of Angels, which if I call the ubiquitary, and omnipresent essence of God, I hope I shall not offend Divinity: for before the Creation of the World, God was really all things. For the Angels he created no new World, or determinate mansion, and therefore they are everywhere where is his Essence, and do live at a distance even in himself. That God made all things for man, is in some sense true, yet not so far as to subordinate the Creation of those purer Creatures unto ours, though as ministring Spirits they do, and are willing to fulfil the will of God in these lower and sublunary affairs of man: God made all things for himself, and it is impossible he should make them for any other end than his own Glory; it is all he can receive, and all that is without himself: for honour being an external adjunct, and in the honourer rather than in the person honoured, it was necessary to make a Creature, from whom he might receive

receive his homage, and that is in the other world Angels, in this, Man; which when we neglect, we forget the very end of our Creation, and may justly provoke God; not onely to repent that he hath made the World, but that he hath sworn he would not destroy it. That there is but one world, is a conclusion of Faith. *Aristotle* with all his Philosophy hath not been able to prove it; and as weakly that the world was eternal; that dispute much troubled the Pen of the Philosophers, \* but *Moses* decided that question, and all is salved with the new term of a Creation,] that is, a production of something out of nothing; and what is that? Whatsoever is opposite to something, or more exactly, that which is truly contrary unto God: for he onely is, all others have an existence with dependency; and are something but by a distinction; and herein is Divinity conformant unto Philosophy, and generation not onely founded on contrarieties, but also creation; God being all things, is contrary unto nothing; out of

G

which

which were made all things, and so nothing became something, and *Omneity* informed *Nullity* into an Essence.

*Sec. 36.* The whole Creation is a Mystery, and particularly that of Man; at the blast of his mouth were the rest of the Creatures made, and at his bare word they started out of nothing: but in the frame of man (as the Text describes it) he played the sensible operator, and seemed not so much to create, as make him; when he had separated the materials of other creatures, there consequently resulted a form and soul; but having raised the walls of man, he has driven to a second and harder creation of a substance like himself, an incorruptible and immortal soul. For these two affections we have the Philosophy and opinion of the *Heathens*, the flat affirmative of *Plato*, and not a negative from *Aristotle*: there is another scruple cast in by Divinity (concerning its production) much disputed in the *Germane* auditories, and with that indifference and equality of arguments, as leave the

the controverſie undertermined. I am not of *Paracelfus* mind, that boldly delivers a receipt to make a man without conjunction ; yet cannot but wonder at the multitude of heads that do deny traduction, having no other argument to confirm their belief, then that Rhetorical ſentence, and *Antimetatheſis* of *Auguſtine*, *Creando infunditur, infundendo creatur* : either opinion will conſiſt well enough with religion ; yet I ſhould rather incline to this, did not one objection haunt me, not wrung from ſpeculations and ſubtilties, but from common ſenſe, and obſervation ; not pickt from the leaves of any Author, but bred amongſt the weeds and tares of mine own brain : And this is a concluſion from the equivocal and monſtrous productions in the copulation of a Man with a Beaſt : for if the Soul of man be not tranſmitted, and tranſuſed in the ſeed of the Parents, why are not thoſe productions meerly beaſts, but have alſo an impreſſion and tincture of reaſon in as high a meaſure, as it can evidence it ſelf

in those improper Organs ? Nor truly can I peremptorily deny, that the Soul in this her sublunary estate, is wholly, and in all acceptations inorganic, but that for the performance of her ordinary actions, there is required not onely a symmetry and proper disposition of Organs; but a Crasis and temper correlative to its operations. Yet is not this mass of flesh and visible structure the instrument and proper corps of the Soul, but rather of Sense, and that the hand of Reason. \* In our study of Anatomy there is a mass of mysterious Philosophy, and such as reduced the very Heathens to Divinity; ] yet amongst all those rare discourses, and curious pieces I find in the Fabric of man, I do not so much content my self, as in that I find not, there is no Organ or Instrument for the rational soul; for in the brain, which we term the seat of reason, there is not any thing of moment more than I can discover in the cranium of a beast: and this is a sensible and no inconsiderable argument of the inorganicity of the Soul, at least in  
that

that sense we usually so conceive it. Thus we are men, and we know not how ; there is something in us that can be without us, and will be after us, though it is strange that it hath no history, what it was before us, nor cannot tell how it entred in us.

Now for these walls of flesh, *Sect. 37.* wherein the Soul doth seem to be immured, before the Resurrection, it is nothing but an elemental composition, and a Fabrick that must fall to ashes. *All flesh is grass*, is not onely metaphorically, but litterally true ; for all those creatures we behold, are but the herbs of the field, digested into flesh in them, or more remotely carnified in our selves. Nay further, we are what we all abhor, *Anthropophagi* and Carnibals, devourers not onely of men, but of our selves ; and that not in an allegory, but a positive truth : for all this mass of flesh which we behold, came in at our mouths ; this frame we look upon, hath been upon our trenchers ; in brief, we have devour'd our selves. \* I cannot believe the wisdom of *Pythagoras* did



ever positively, and in a literal sense affirm his *Metempsychosis*, or impossible transmigration of the Souls of men into beasts: of all Metamorphoses, or transigrations, I believe only one, that is of *Zots* wife; for that of *Nebuchodonosor* proceeded not so far; in all others I conceive there is no further verity than is contained in their implicate sense and morality. I believe that the whole frame of a beast doth perish, and is left in the same state after death, as before it was materialled unto life; that the souls of men know neither contrary nor corruption; that they subsist beyond the body, and outlive death by the privilege of their proper natures, and without a Miracle, that the Souls of the faithful, as they leave Earth, take possession of Heaven; that those apparitions and ghosts of departed persons are not the wandring souls of men, but the unquiet walks of Devils, prompting and suggesting us unto mischief, blood, and villany, instilling, and stealing into our hearts; that the blessed spirits are not at rest  
in

in their graves, but wander sollicitous of the affairs of the world ; but that those phantasms appear often, and do frequent Cœmeteries, Charnel-houses, and Churches, it is because those are the dormitories of the dead, where the Devil like an insolent Champion beholds with pride the spoils and Trophies of his Victory over *Adam*.

This is that dismal conquest we *Sec. 38.* all deplore, that makes us so often cry (O) *Adam quid fecisti ?* I thank God I have not those strait ligaments, or narrow obligations to the world, as to dote on life, or be convuls'd and tremble at the name of death: Not that I am insensible of the dread and horror thereof, or by raking into the bowels of the deceased, continual sight of Anatomies, Skeletons, or Cadaverous reliques, like Vespilloes, or Grave-makers, I am become stupid, or have forgot the apprehension of Mortality ; but that marshalling all the horrors, and contemplating the extremities thereof, I find not any thing therein able to daunt the courage of a man,

much less a well-resolved Christian. And therefore am not angry at the error of our first Parents, or unwilling to bear a part of this common fate, and like the best of them to dye, that is, to cease to breathe, to take a farewell of the elements, to be a kind of nothing for a moment, to be within one instant of a spirit. When I take a full view and circle of my self, without this reasonable moderator, and equal piece of Justice, Death, I do conceive my self the miserablest person extant; were there not another life that I hope for, all the vanities of this World should not intreat a moments breath from me: could the Devil work my belief to imagine I could never dye, I would not outlive that very thought; I have so abject a conceit of this common way of existence, this retaining to the Sun and Elements, I cannot think this is to be a man, or to live according to the dignity of humanity: in expectation of a better, I can with patience embrace this life, yet in my best meditations do often desire death: I  
honour

honour any man that contemns it, nor can I highly love any that is afraid of it: this makes me naturally love a Souldier, and honour those tattered and contemptible Regiments, that will dye at the command of a Sergeant. For a Pagan there may be some motives to be in love with life; but for a Christian to be amazed at death, I see not how he can escape this Dilemma, that he is too sensible of this life, or hopeless of the life to come.

Some Divines count *Adam* 30 *Señ.* 39: years old at his Creation, because they suppose him created in the perfect age and stature of man. And surely we are all out of the computation of our age, and every man is some months elder than he bethinks him; for we live, move, have a being, and are subject to the actions of the elements, and the malice of diseases, in that other world, the truest Microcosm, the womb of our mother. For besides that general and common existence we are conceived to hold in our Chaos, and whilst we sleep within the bosome of our causes,

causes, we enjoy a being and life in three distinct worlds, wherein we receive most manifest graduations: In that obscure world and womb of our mother, our time is short, computed by the Moon; yet longer then the days of many creatures that behold the Sun, our selves being not yet without life, sense, and reason; though for the manifestation of its actions, it awaits the opportunity of objects, and seems to live there but in its root and soul of vegetation: entring afterwards upon the scene of the world, we arise up and become another creature, performing thereasonable actions of man, and obscurely manifesting that part of Divinity in us, but not in complement and perfection till we have once more cast our secondine, that is, this slough of flesh, and are delivered into the last world, that is, that ineffable place of *Paul*, that proper *ubi* of spirits. The smattering I have of the Philosophers Stone (which is something more then the perfect exaltation of Gold) hath taught me a great deal of Divinity, and instructed my belief

lief, how that immortal spirit, and incorruptible substance of my Soul may lye obscure, and sleep a while within this house of flesh. Those strange and mystical transmigrations that I have observed in Silk-worms, turned my Philosophy into Divinity. There is in these works of nature, which seem to puzzle reason, something Divine, and hath more in it then the eye of a common spectator doth discover.

I am naturally bashful, nor hath *Sect. 40.* conversation age or travel, been able to effront, or enharden me; yet I have one part of modesty, which I have seldom discovered in another, that is, (to speak truly) I am not so much afraid of death, as ashamed thereof; 'tis the very disgrace and ignominy of our natures, that in a moment can so disfigure us, that our nearest friends, Wife and Children stand afraid and start at us. The Birds and Beasts of the field, that before in a natural fear obeyed us, forgetting all allegiance begin to prey upon us. This very conceit hath in a tempest disposed and left me wil-  
ling



ling to be swallowed up in the abyſs of waters; wherein I had periſhed unſeen, unpityed, without wondering eyes, tears of pity, Lectures of mortality, and none had ſaid, *Quantum mutatus ab illo!* Not that I am aſhamed of the Anatomy of my parts, or can accuſe Nature for playing the bungler in any part of me, or my own vitious life for contracting any ſhameful diſeaſe upon me, whereby I might not call my ſelf as wholeſome a morſel for the worms as any.

Sec. 41.

Some upon the courage of a fruitful iſſue, wherein, as in the trueſt Chronicle, they ſeem to outlive themſelves, can with greater patience away with death. This conceit and counterfeit ſubſiſting in our progenies, ſeems to be a meer fallacy, unworthy the deſires of a man, that can but conceive a thought of the next world; who, in a nobler ambition, ſhould deſire to live in his ſubſtance in Heaven, rather than his name and ſhadow in the earth. And therefore at my death I mean to take a total adieu of the world, not caring  
for

for a Monument, History, or Epitaph, not so much as the memory of my name to be found any where, but in the universal Register of God. I am not yet so Cynical, as to approve the \* Testament of *Diogenes*, nor do I altogether allow that *Rodomontado* of *Lucan* ;

— *Cælo tegitur, qui non habet urnam.*

*He that unburied lies wants not his Herse,  
For unto him a Tomb's the Universe.*

\*Who wil-  
led his  
friend not  
to bury  
him, but  
hang him  
up with a  
staff in his  
hand to  
frightaway  
the Crows.

But commend in my calmer judgement, those ingenuous intentions that desire to sleep by the urns of theirs Fathers, and strive to go the neatest way unto corruption. \* I do not envy the temper of Crows and Daws,] nor the numerous and weary days of our Fathers before the Flood. If there be any truth in Astrology, I may outlive a Jubilee ; as yet I have not seen one revolution of *Saturn*, nor hath my pulse beat thirty years ; and yet excepting one, have seen the Ashes, and left under ground, all the Kings of *Europe* ; have been contemporary to three Emperours,  
four

four Grand Signiours, and as many Popes : methinks I have outlived my self, and begin to be weary of the Sun ; I have shaken hands with delight : in my warm blood and Canicular days, I perceive I do anticipate the vices of age ; the world to me is but a dream or mock-show, and we all therein but Pantalones and Anticks, to my severer contemplations.

*Sect. 42.*

It is not, I confess, an unlawful Prayer to desire to surpass the days of our Saviour, or wish to outlive that age wherein he thought fittest to dye ; yet if (as Divinity affirms) there shall be no gray hairs in Heaven, but all shall rise in the perfect state of men, we do but outlive those perfections in this World, to be recalled unto them by a greater Miracle in the next, and run on here but to be retrograde hereafter. Were there any hopes to outlive vice, or a point to be super-annuated from sin, it were worthy our knees to implore the days of *Methuselah*. But age doth not rectifie, but incurvate our natures, turning bad dispositions

sitions into worser habits, and (like diseases) brings on incurable vices; for every day as we grow weaker in age, we grow stronger in sin; and the number of our days doth but make our sins innumerable. The same vice committed at sixteen, is not the same, though it agrees in all other circumstances, as at forty, but swells and doubles from that circumstance of our ages, wherein, besides the constant and inexcusable habit of transgressing, the maturity of our judgement cuts off pretence unto excuse or pardon: every sin the oftner it is committed, the more it acquireth in the quality of evil; as it succeeds in time, so it proceeds in degrees of badness; for as they proceed they ever multiply, and like figures in Arithmetick, the last stands for more than all that went before it. And though I think no man can live well once, but he that could live twice, yet for my own part I would not live over my hours past, or begin again the thred of my days: \* not upon *Cicero's* ground, because I have lived them well, but for fear I should live

live them worse: ] I find my growing Judgment daily instruct me how to be better, but my untamed affections and confirmed vitiosity makes me daily do worse; I find in my confirmed age the same sins I discovered in my youth; I committed many then because I was a Child, and because I commit them still, I am yet an infant. Therefore I perceive a man may be twice a Child before the days of dotage, || and stand in need of *Æsons* bath before threescore. ]

*Señ. 43.*

And truly there goes a great deal of providence to produce a mans life unto threescore; there is more required than an able temper for those years; though the radical humour contain in it sufficient oyl for seventy, yet I perceive in some it gives no light past thirty: men assign not all the causes of long life, that write whole Books thereof. They that found themselves on the radical balsome, or vital sulphur of the parts, determine not why *Abel* lived not so long as *Adam*. There is therefore a secret glome or bottome of our days, 'twas his wisdom to determine

mine them, but his perpetual and waking providence that fulfils and accomplisheth them ; wherein the spirits, our selves, and all the creatures of God in a secret and disputed way do execute his will. Let them not therefore complain of immaturity that dye about thirty ; they fall but like the whole world, whose solid and well-composed substance must not expect the duration and period of its constitution : when all things are compleated in it, its age is accomplished ; and the last and general fever may as naturally destroy it before six thousand, as me before forty ; there is therefore some other hand that twines the thread of life than that of Nature : we are not onely ignorant in Antipathies and occult qualities ; our ends are as obscure as our beginnings ; the line of our days is drawn by night, and the various effects therein by a pensil that is invisible ; wherein though we confess our ignorance, I am sure we do not err if we say it is the hand of God.

I am much taken with two verses *Sect. 44.*

seldom

H

of



of *Lucan*, since I have been able not  
onely as we do at School, to con-  
strue, but understand.

*Victurosque Dei celant ut vivere darent,  
Felix esse mori.*

*We're all deluded, vainly searching ways  
To make us happy by the length of days ;  
For cunningly to make's protract his breath,  
The Gods conceal the happiness of Death.*

There be many excellent strains in  
that Poet, wherewith his Stoical Ge-  
nius hath liberally supplied him ;  
and truely there are singular pieces  
in the Philosophy of *Zeno*, and do-  
ctrine of the Stoicks, which I per-  
ceive, delivered in a Pulpit, pass  
for current Divinity : yet herein  
are they in extreame, that can allow  
a man to be his own *Assassine*, and so  
highly \* extol the end and suicide  
of *Cato* ; ] this is indeed not to fear  
death, but yet to be afraid of life.  
It is a brave act of valour to con-  
temn death ; but where life is more  
terrible than death, it is then the  
truest valour to dare to live ; and  
herein Religion hath taught us a  
noble

noble example : For all the valiant acts of *Curtius*, *Stevolia*, or *Codrus*, do not parallel or match that one of *Job* ; and sure there is no torture to the rack of a disease, nor any Ponyards in death it self, like thole in the way or prologue to it. \* *Emori nolo, sed me esse mortuum nihil curo* ; ] I would not dye, but care not to be dead. Were I of *Cesar's* Religion, I should be of his desires, and wish rather to go off at one blow, then to be sawed in pieces by the grating torture of a disease. Men that look no farther than their outsides, think health an appurtenance unto life, and quarrel with their constitutions for being sick ; but I that have examined the parts of man, and know upon what tender filaments that Fa-  
brick hangs, do wonder that we are not always so ; and considering the thousand doors that lead to death, do thank my God that we can die but once. 'Tis not onely the mischief of diseases , and villany of poysons, that make an end of us ; we vainly accuse the fury of Guns, and the new inventions of death ; it

is in the power of every hand to destroy us, and we are beholding unto every one we meet, he doth not kill us. There is therefore but one comfort left, that though it be in the power of the weakest arm to take away life, it is not in the strongest to deprive us of death : God would not exempt himself from that, the misery of immortality in the flesh ; he undertook not that was immortal. Certainly there is no happiness within this circle of flesh, nor is it in the Opticks of these eyes to behold felicity, the first day of our Jubilee is death ; the Devil hath therefore failed of his desires ; we are happier with death than we should have been without it : there is no misery but in himself, where there is no end of misery ; and so indeed in his own sense, the Stoick is in the right. He forgets that he can dye who complains of misery ; we are in the power of no calamity while death is in our own.

*Sect. 45.*

Now besides the literal and positive kind of death, there are others whereof Divines makes mention, and those

those I think, not meerly Metaphorical, as mortification, dying unto sin and the world; therefore, I say, every man hath a double Horoscope, one of his humanity, his birth; another of his Christianity, his baptism; and from this do I compute or calculate my Nativity; not reckoning those *Hora combustæ* and odd days, or esteeming my self any thing, before I was my Saviours, and inrolled in the Register of Christ: Whosoever enjoys not this life, I count him but an apparition, though he wear about him the sensible affections of flesh. In these moral acceptions, the way to be immortal is to dye daily; nor can I think I have the true Theory of death, when I contemplate a skull, or behold a Skeleton with those vulgar imaginations it casts upon us; I have therefore enlarged that common *Memento mori*, into a more Christian memorandum, *Memento quatuor Novissima*, those four inevitable points of us all, Death, Judgement, Heaven and Hell. Neither did the contemplations of the Heathens rest in their

graves, without further thought of *Rhadamanth* or some judicial proceeding after death, though in another way, and upon suggestion of their natural reasons. I cannot but marvel from what *Sibyl* or Oracle they stole the Propheſie of the worlds destruction by fire, or whence *Lucan* learned to ſay,

*Communis mundo ſupereſt roguſ, offibus aſtra  
Miſturnuſ.*————

*There yet remains to th<sup>is</sup> world one common Fire,  
Wherein our bones with ſtars ſhall make one Pyre.*

I believe the World grows near its end, yet is neither old nor decayed, nor ſhall ever periſh upon the ruines of its own Principles. As the work of Creation was above nature, ſo its adverſary annihilation ; without which the world hath not its end, but its mutation. Now what force ſhould be able to conſume it thus far, without the breath of God, which is the trueſt conſuming flame, my Philoſophy cannot inform me. Some believe there went not a minute to the worlds creation, nor ſhall there

there go to its destruction ; those six days so punctually described, make not to them one moment, but rather seem to manifest the method and Idea of the great work of the intellect of God, than the manner how he proceeded in its operation. I cannot dream that there should be at the last day any such Judicial proceeding, or calling to the Bar, as indeed the Scripture seems to imply, and the literal Commentators do conceive : for unspeakable mysteries in the Scriptures are often delivered in a vulgar and illustrative way ; and being written unto man, are delivered, not as they truly are, but as they may be understood ; wherein notwithstanding the different interpretations according to different capacities may stand firm with our devotion, nor be any way prejudicial to each single edification.

Now to determine the day and *Sect. 46.*  
year of this inevitable time, is not onely convincible and statute-madness, but also manifest impietie:

\* How shall we interpret *Elias*



6000 years,] or imagine the secret communicated to a Rabbi, which God hath denyed unto his Angels? It had been an excellent Quære to have posed the Devil of *Delphos*, and must needs have forced him to some strange amphibology; it hath not onely mocked the predictions of sundry Astrologers in Ages past, but the prophesies of many melancholy heads in these present, who neither understanding reasonably things past or present, pretend a knowledge of things to come; heads ordained onely to manifest the incredible effects of melancholy, and to fulfil old prophecies, rather than be the authors of new. [In those days there shall come Wars, and rumours of Wars,] to me seems no prophecy, but a constant truth, in all times verified since it was pronounced: There shall be signs in the Moon and Stars; how comes he then like a Thief in the night, when he gives an item of his coming? That common sign drawn from the revelation of Antichrist, is as obscure as any; in our common compute he hath been come these

In those  
days there  
shall come  
lyars and  
false pro-  
phets.

these many years ; but for my own part to speak freely, I am half of opinion that Antichrist is the Philosophers stone in Divinity ; for the discovery and invention thereof, though there be prescribed rules, and probable inductions, yet hath hardly any man attained the perfect discovery thereof. That general opinion that the world grows neer its end, hath possessed all ages past as neerly as ours ; I am afraid that the Souls that now depart, cannot escape that lingring expostulation of the Saints under the Altar, *Quousque Domine ? How long, O Lord ?* and groan in the expectation of that great Jubilee.

This is the day that must make *Sect. 47.* good that great attribute of God, his Justice ; that must reconcile those unanswerable doubts that torment the wisest understandings, and reduce those seeming inequalities, and respective distributions in this world, to an equality and recompensive Justice in the next. This is that one day, that shall include and comprehend all that went before it ; wherein, as in the last scene, all the Actors must

must enter, to compleat and make up the Catastrophe of this great piece. This is the day whose memory hath onely power to make us honest in the dark, and to be vertuous without a witness. \* *Ipsa sui pretium virtus sibi,*] that Vertue is her own reward, is but a cold principle, and not able to maintain our variable resolutions in a constant and settled way of goodness. I have practised || that honest artifice of *Senecca,*] and in my retired and solitary imaginations, to detain me from the foulness of vice, have fancied to my self the presence of my dear and worthiest friends, before whom I should lose my head, rather than be virious; yet herein I found that there was nought but moral honesty, and this was not to be vertuous for his sake who must reward us at the last. \* I have tryed if I could reach that great resolution of his, to be honest without a thought of Heaven or Hell; ] and indeed I found upon a natural inclination, and inbred loyalty unto virtue, that I could serve her without a livery; yet not in that  
resolved

resolved and venerable way, but that the frailty of my nature, upon easie temptation, might be induced to forget her. The life therefore and spirit of all our actions, is the resurrection, and a stable apprehension that our ashes shall enjoy the fruit of our pious endeavours ; without this, all Religion is a Fallacy, and those impieties of *Lucian*, *Euripides*, and *Julian*, are no blasphemies, but subtle verities, \* and Atheists have been the onely Philosophers.]

How shall the dead arise, is no question of my Faith ; to believe onely possibilities, is not Faith, but meer Philosophy. Many things are true in Divinity, which are neither inducible by reason, nor confirmable by sense ; and many things in Philosophy confirmable by sense, yet not inducible by reason. Thus it is impossible by any solid or demonstrative reasons to perswade a man to believe the conversion of the Needle to the North ; though this be possible and true, and easily credible, upon a single experiment unto the sense. I believe that our estranged  
and

and divided ashes shall unite again; that our separated dust after so many Pilgrimages and transformations into the parts of Minerals, Plants, Animals, Elements, shall at the Voice of God return into their primitive shapes, and joyn again to make up their primary and predestinate forms. As at the Creation there was a separation of that confused mass into its pieces; so at the destruction thereof there shall be a separation into its distinct individuals. As at the Creation of the World, all the distinct species that we behold, lay involved in one mass, till the fruitful Voice of God separated this united multitude into its several species: so at the last day, when those corrupted reliques shall be scattered in the Wilderness of forms, and seem to have forgot their proper habits, \* God by a powerful Voice shall command them back into their proper shapes, ] and call them out by their single individuals: Then shall appear the fertility of *Adam*, and the magick of that sperm that hath dilated into so many millions.

I have often beheld as a miracle, that artificial resurrection and revivification of *Mercury*, how being mortified into a thousand shapes, it assumes again its own, and returns into its numerical self. Let us speak naturally, and like Philosophers, the forms of alterable bodies in these sensible corruptions perish not; nor as we imagine, wholly quit their mansions, but retire and contract themselves into their secret and unaccessible parts, where they may best protect themselves from the action of their Antagonist. A plant or vegetable consumed to ashes, by a contemplative and school-Philosopher seems utterly destroyed, and the form to have taken his leave for ever: But to a sensible Artist the forms are not perished, but withdrawn into their incombustible part, where they lie secure from the action of that devouring element. This is made good by experience, which can from the Ashes of a Plant revive the plant, and from its cinders recal it into its stalk and leaves again. What the Art of man can do in these  
inferi-



inferiour pieces, what blasphemy is it to affirm the finger of God cannot do in these more perfect and sensible structures? This is that mystical Philosophy; from whence no true Scholar becomes an Atheist, but from the visible effects of nature grows up a real Divine; and beholds not in a dream, as *Ezekiel*, but in an ocular and visible object the types of his resurrection.

*Scē. 49.* Now, the necessary Mansions of our restored selves, are those two contrary and incompatible places we call Heaven and Hell; to define them, or strictly to determine what and where these are, surpasseth my Divinity. That elegant Apostle which seemed to have a glimpse of Heaven, hath left but a negative description thereof; *which neither eye hath seen, nor ear hath heard, nor can enter into the heart of man*: he was translated out of himself to behold it; but being returned into himself, could not express it. St. *John's* description by Emeralds, Chrysolites, and precious Stones, is too weak to express the material Heaven we behold.

behold. Briefly therefore, where the Soul hath the full measure, and complement of happiness; where the boundless appetite of that spirit remains compleatly satisfied, that it can neither desire addition nor alteration, that I think is truly Heaven: and this can onely be in the enjoyment of that essence, whose infinite goodness is able to terminate the desires of it self, and the unsatiabable wishes of ours; wherever God will thus manifest himself, there is Heaven, though within the circle of this sensible world. Thus the Soul of man may be in Heaven any where, even within the limits of his own proper body; and when it ceaseth to live in the body, it may remain in its own soul, that is, its Creator. And thus we may say that St. *Paul*, whether in the body, or out of the body, was yet in Heaven. To place it in the Empyrean, or beyond the tenth sphere, is to forget the worlds destruction; for when this sensible world shall be destroyed, all shall then be here as it is now there, an Empyrean Heaven, a *quasi* vacuity; when to ask  
where

where Heaven is, is to demand where the Presence of God is, or where we have the glory of that happy vision. *Moses* that was bred up in all the learning of the *Egyptians*, committed a gross absurdity in Philosophy, when with these eyes of flesh he desired to see God, and petitioned his Maker, that is truth it self, to a contradiction. Those that imagine Heaven and Hell neighbours, and conceive a vicinity between those two extreams, upon consequence of the Parable, where *Dives* discoursed with *Lazarus* in *Abraham's* bosome, do too grossly conceive of those glorified creatures, whose eyes shall easily out-see the Sun, and behold without a perspective the extreamest distances: for if there shall be in our glorified eyes, the faculty of sight and reception of objects, I could think the visible species there to be in as unlimitable a way as now the intellectual. I grant that two bodies placed beyond the tenth sphere, or in a vacuity, according to *Aristotle's* Philosophy, could not behold each other, because there wants a body  
or

or Medium to hand and transport the visible rays of the object unto the sense, but when there shall be a general defect of either Medium to convey, or light to prepare and dispose that Medium, and yet a perfect vision, we must suspend the rules of our Philosophy, and make all good by a more absolute piece of opticks.

I cannot tell how to say that fire is the essence of Hell; I know not what to make of Purgatory, \* or conceive a flame that can either prey upon, or purifie the substance of a Soul: ] those flames of sulphur mention'd in the Scriptures, I take not to be understood of this present Hell, but of that to come, where fire shall make up the complement of our tortures, and have a body or subject wherein to manifest its tyranny. Some who have had the honour to be textuary in Divinity, are of opinion it shall be the same specificall fire with ours. This is hard to conceive, yet can I make good how even that may prey upon our bodies, and yet not consume us: for

in this material world, there are bodies that persist invincible in the powerfulllest flames; and though by the action of fire they fall into ignition and liquation; yet will they never suffer a destruction. I would gladly know how *Moses* with an actual fire calcin'd, or burnt the Golden Calf unto powder: for that mystical metal of Gold, whose solar and celestial nature I admire, exposed unto the violence of fire, grows onely hot and liquifies, but consumeth not: for when the consumable and volatile pieces of our bodies shall be refined into a more impregnable and fixed temper, like Gold, though they suffer from the actions of flames, they shall never perish, but lye immortal in the arms of fire. And surely if this frame must suffer onely by the action of this element, there will many bodies escape, and not onely Heaven, but Earth will not be at an end, but rather a beginning. For at present it is not earth, but a composition of fire, water, earth, and air; but at that time, spoiled of these ingredients, it shall appear

pear in a substance more like it self, its ashes. Philosophers that opinioned the worlds destruction by fire, did never dream of annihilation, which is beyond the power of sublunary causes ; for the last action of that element is but vitrification, or a reduction of a body into glass, and therefore some of our Chymicks facetiously affirm, that at the last fire all shall be christallized and reverberated into glass, which is the utmost action of that element. Nor need we fear this term [annihilation] or wonder that God will destroy the works of his Creation : for man subsisting, who is, and will then truly appear a Microcosm, the world cannot be said to be destroyed. For the eyes of God, and perhaps also of our glorified selves, shall as really behold and contemplate the world in its Epitome or contracted essence, as now it doth at large and in its dilated substance. In the seed of a Plant, to the eyes of God, and to the understanding of man, there exists, though in an invisible way, the perfect leaves, flowers



and fruit thereof: (for things that are in *posse* to the sense, are actually existent to the understanding.) Thus God beholds all things, who contemplates as fully his works in their Epitome, as in their full volume; and beheld as amply the whole world in that little compendium of the sixth day, as in the scattered and dilated pieces of those five before.

*Señ. 51.*

Men commonly set forth the torments of Hell by fire, and the extremity of corporal afflictions, and describe Hell in the same method that *Mahomet* doth Heaven. This indeed makes a noise, and drums in popular ears: but if this be the terrible piece thereof, it is not worthy to stand in diameter with Heaven, whose happiness consists in that part that is best able to comprehend it, that immortal essence, that translated divinity and colony of God, the Soul. Surely though we place Hell under Earth, the Devil's walk and purlue is about it: men speak too popularly who place it in those flaming mountains, which to grosser apprehensions represent Hell. The heart

heart of man is the place the Devils dwell in ; I feel sometimes a Hell within my self ; *Lucifer* keeps his Court in my brest ; *Legion* is revived in me : \* There are as many Hells, as *Anaxagoras* conceited worlds: ]there was more than one Hell in *Magdalene*, when there were seven Devils ; for every Devil is an Hell unto himself ; he holds enough of torture in his own *ubi*, and needs not the misery of circumference to afflict him. And thus a distracted Conscience here, is a shadow or introduction unto Hell hereafter. Who can but pity the merciful intention of those hands that do destroy themselves ? the Devil, were it in his power, would do the like ; which being impossible, his miseries are endless, and he suffers most in that attribute wherein he is impassible, his immortality.

I thank God that with joy I mention it, I was never afraid of Hell, nor never grew pale at the description of that place ; I have so fixed my contemplations on Heaven, that I have almost forgot the Idea of Hell, and am afraid rather to lose the Joys

of the one, than endure the misery of the other; to be deprived of them, is a perfect Hell, and needs methinks no addition to compleat our afflictions; that terrible term hath never detained me from sin, nor do I owe any good action to the name thereof: I fear God, yet am not afraid of him; his Mercies make me ashamed of my sins, before his Judgements afraid thereof: these are the forced and secondary method of his wisdom, which he useth but as the last remedy, and upon provocation; a course rather to deter the wicked, than incite the virtuous to his worship. I can hardly think there was ever any scared into Heaven; they go the fairest way to Heaven, that would serve God without a Hell; other Mercenaries, that crouch unto him in fear of Hell, though they term themselves the servants, are indeed but the slaves of the Almighty.

*Scet. 53.*

And to be true, and speak my soul, when I survey the occurrences of my life, and call into account the Finger of God, I can perceive nothing but an abyss and mass of mercies, either  
in

in general to mankind, or in particular to my self; and whether out of the prejudice of my affection, or an inverting and partial conceit of his mercies, I know not; but those which others term crosses, afflictions, judgments, misfortunes, to me who inquire farther into them than their visible effects, they both appear, and in event have ever proved the secret and dissembled favours of his affection. It is a singular piece of Wisdom to apprehend truly, and without passion, the Works of God; and so well to distinguish his Justice from his Mercy, as not mis-call those noble Attributes: yet it is likewise an honest piece of Logick, so to dispute and argue the proceedings of God, as to distinguish even his judgments into mercies. For God is merciful unto all, because better to the worst, than the best deserve; and to say he punisheth none in this world, though it be a Paradox, is no absurdity. To one that hath committed Murther, if the Judge should only ordain a Fine, it were a madness to call this a punishment, and to repine at the sentence,

visum  
I 4 rather

rather than admire the clemency of the Judge. Thus our offences being mortal, and deserving not onely Death, but Damnation; if the goodness of God be content to traverse and pass them over with a loss, misfortune, or disease; what frensie were it to term this a punishment, rather than an extremity of mercy; and to groan under the rod of his Judgements, rather than admire the Scepter of his Mercies? Therefore to adore, honour, and admire him, is a debt of gratitude due from the obligation of our nature, states, and conditions; and with these thoughts, he that knows them best, will not deny that I adore him. That I obtain Heaven, and the blis thereof, is accidental, and not the intended work of my devotion; it being a felicity I can neither think to deserve, nor scarce in modesty to expect. For those two ends of us all, either as rewards or punishments, are mercifully ordained and disproportionably disposed unto our actions; the one being so far beyond our deserts, the other so infinitely

infinitely below our demerits.

There is no Salvation to those that *Scilicet* 54. believe not in Christ, that is, say some, since his Nativity, and as Divinity affirmeth, before also; which makes me much apprehend the ends of those honest Worthies and Philosophers which dyed before his Incarnation. \* It is hard to place those Souls in Hell] whose worthy lives do teach us Virtue on Earth: methinks amongst those many subdivisions of Hell, there might have been one Limbo left for these. What a strange vision will it be to see their Poetical fictions converted into Verities, and their imagined and fancied Furies, into real Devils? how strange to them will sound the History of *Adam*, when they shall suffer for him they never heard of? when they who derive their genealogy from the Gods, shall know they are the unhappy issue of sinful man? It is an insolent part of reason, to controvert the Works of God, or question the Justice of his proceedings. Could Humility teach others, as it hath instructed me, to contemplate  
the



the infinite and incomprehensible distance betwixt the Creator and the Creature; or did we seriously perpend that one simile of St. Paul, *Shall the Vessel say to the Potter, Why hast thou made me thus?* it would prevent these arrogant disputes of reason, nor would we argue the definitive sentence of God, either to Heaven or Hell. Men that live according to the right rule and law of reason, live but in their own kind, as beasts do in theirs; who justly obey the prescript of their natures, and therefore cannot reasonably demand a reward of their actions, as onely obeying the natural dictates of their reason. It will therefore, and must at last appear, that all salvation is through Christ; which verity I fear these great examples of virtue must confirm, and make it good, how the perfectest actions of earth have no title or claim unto Heaven.

*Sci. 55.* Nor truely do I think the lives of these or of any other were ever correspondent, or in all points conformable unto their doctrines. It is evident that \* *Aristotle* transgressed the rule

rule of his own Ethicks;] the Stoicks that condemn passion, and command a man to laugh in *Phalaris* his Bull, could not endure without a groan a fit of the Stone or Colick. || The *Scepticks* that affirmed they knew nothing,] even in that opinion confute themselves, and thought they knew more than all the World beside. *Diogenes* I hold to be the most vain-glorious man of his time, and more ambitious in refusing all Honours, than *Alexander* in rejecting none. Vice and the Devil put a Fallacy upon our Reasons, and provoking us too hastily to run from it, entangle and profound us deeper in it. \* The Duke of *Venice*, that weds himself unto the Sea, by a Ring of Gold,] I will not argue of prodigality, because it is a solemnity of good use and consequence in the State: || But the Philosopher that threw his money into the Sea to avoid Avarice, was a notorious prodigal. ] There is no road or ready way to virtue; it is not an easie point of art to disentangle our selves from this riddle, or web of Sin: To perfect virtue, as to Religion

Religion, there is required a *Panoplia*, or compleat armour; that whilst we lye at close ward against one Vice, we lye not open to the venny of another. And indeed wiser discretions that have the thred of reason to conduct them, offend without pardon; whereas, under-heads may stumble without dishonour.

\* There go so many circumstances to piece up one good action, that it is a lesson to be good, and we are forced to be virtuous by the book.] Again, the Practice of men holds not an equal pace, yea, and often runs counter to their Theory; we naturally know what is good, but naturally pursue what is evil: the Rhetorick wherewith I perswade another, cannot perswade my self: there is a depraved appetite in us, that will with patience hear the learned instructions of Reason, but yet perform no farther than agrees to its own irregular humour. In brief, we all are monsters, that is, a composition of Man and Beast; wherein we must endeavour to be as the Poets fancy that wise man *Chiron*, that is,

to have the Region of Man above that of Beast, and Sense to sit but at the feet of Reason. Lastly, I do desire with God, that all, but yet affirm with men, that few shall know Salvation; that the bridge is narrow, the passage straight unto life: yet those who do confine the Church of God, either to particular Nations, Churches or Families, have made it far narrower then our Saviour ever meant it.

\* The vulgarity of those judge-*Señ. 56.*ments that wrap the Church of God in *Strabo's* cloak, and restrain it unto *Europe*, ] seem to me as bad Geographers as *Alexander*, who thought he had Conquer'd all the World, when he had not subdued the half of any part thereof. For we cannot deny the Church of God both in *Asia* and *Africa*, if we do not forget the Peregrinations of the Apostles, the deaths of the Martyrs, the Sessions of many, and, even in our reformed judgement, lawful Councils, held in those parts in the minority and nonage of ours. Nor must a few differences, more remarkable in the eyes

eyes of man ; than perhaps in the judgement of God, excommunicate from Heaven one another, much less those Christians who are in a manner all Martyrs, maintaining their Faith, in the noble way of persecution, and serving God in the Fire, whereas we honour him in the Sunshine. 'Tis true, we all hold there is a number of Elect, and many to be saved ; yet take our Opinions together, and from the confusion thereof there will be no such thing as salvation, nor shall any one be saved. For first, the Church of *Rome* condemneth us, we likewise them ; the Sub-reformists and Sectaries sentence the Doctrine of our Church as damnable ; the Atomist, or Familist, reprobates all these, and all these, them again. Thus whilst the Mercies of God do promise us Heaven, our conceits and opinions exclude us from that place. There must be therefore more than one *St. Peter* ; particular Churches and Sects usurp the gates of Heaven, and turn the key against each other : and thus we go to Heaven against each others wills, conceits and opinions

nions; and with as much uncharity as ignorance, do err I fear in points not only of our own, but one anothers salvation.

I believe many are saved, who to *Señ. 57.* man seem reprobated; and many are reprobated, who in the opinion and sentence of man stand elected: there will appear at the Last day, strange and unexpected examples, both of his Justice and his Mercy; and therefore to define either, is folly in man, and insolency even in the Devils: those acute and subtil spirits in all their sagacity, can hardly divine who shall be saved; which if they could Prognostick, their labour were at an end; nor need they compass the earth seeking whom they may devour. \* Those who upon a rigid application of the Law, sentence *Solomon* unto damnation,] condemn not onely him, but themselves, and the whold World; for by the Letter, and written Word of God, we are without exception in the state of Death; but there is a prerogative of God, and an arbitrary pleasure above the Letter of his own Law, by which alone



alone we can pretend unto Salvation, and through which *Solomon* might be as easily saved as those who condemn him.

*Sect. 58.* The number of those who pretend unto Salvation, and those infinite swarms who think to pass through the eye of this Needle, have much amazed me. That name and compellation of *little Flock*, doth not comfort, but deject my Devotion, especially when I reflect upon mine own unworthiness, wherein, according to my humble apprehensions, I am below them all. I believe there shall never be an Anarchy in Heaven, but as there are Hierarchies amongst the Angels, so shall there be degrees of priority amongst the Saints. Yet is it (I protest) beyond my ambition to aspire unto the first ranks; my desires onely are, and I shall be happy therein, to be but the last man, and bring up the Rere in Heaven.

*Sect. 59.* Again, I am confident, and fully perswaded, yet dare not take my oath of my Salvation: I am as it were sure, and do believe without all doubt,

doubt, that there is such a City as *Constantinople*; yet for me to take my Oath thereon, were a kind of Perjury, because I hold no infallible warrant from my own sense to confirm me in the certainty thereof: And truly, though many pretend an absolute certainty of their Salvation, yet when an humble Soul shall contemplate our own unworthiness, she shall meet with many doubts, and suddenly find how little we stand in need of the Precept of *St. Paul*, *Work out your salvation with fear and trembling.* That which is the cause of my Election, I hold to be the cause of my Salvation, which was the mercy and beneplacit of God, before I was, or the foundation of the World. *Before Abraham was, I am*, is the saying of Christ; yet is it true in some sense, if I say it of my self; for I was not onely before my self, but *Adam*, that is, in the Idea of God, and the decree of that Synod held from all Eternity. And in this sense, I say, the World was before the Creation, and at an end before it had a beginning; and thus was I dead

K

before

before I was alive ; though my grave be *England*, my dying place was *Paradise* ; and *Eve* miscarried of me, before she conceiv'd of *Cain*.

*Sect. 60.* Insolent zeals that do decry good Works, and rely onely upon Faith, take not away merit : for depending upon the efficacy of their Faith, they enforce the condition of God, and in a more sophistical way do seem to challenge Heaven. It was decreed by God, that only those that lapt in the water like Dogs, should have the honour to destroy the *Midianites* ; yet could none of those justly challenge, or imagine he deserved that honour thereupon. I do not deny, but that true Faith, and such as God requires, is not onely a mark or token, but also a means of our Salvation ; but where to find this, is as obscure to me, as my last end. And if our Saviour could object unto his own Disciples and Favourites, a Faith, that, to the quantity of a grain of Mustard-seed, is able to remove Mountains ; surely that which we boast of, is not any thing, or at the most, but a remove from nothing.

This

This is the Tenor of my belief ; wherein, though there be many things singular, and to the humour of my irregular self ; yet if they square not with maturer judgements I disclaim them, and do no further favour them, than the learned and best judgements shall authorize them.

---

*The Second Part.*

NOW for that other Virtue of Sect. 1. Charity, without which Faith is a meer notion, and of no existence, I have ever endeavoured to nourish the merciful disposition and humane inclination I borrowed from my Parents, and regulate it to the written and prescribed Laws of Charity; and if I hold the true Anatomy of my self, I am delineated and naturally framed to such a piece of virtue. For I am of a constitution so general, that it comforts and sympathizeth

K 2

with

with all things, I have no antipathy, or rather Idio-syncrasie, in dyet, humour, air, any thing: \* I wonder not at the *French* for their dishes of Frogs, Snails,] and Toadstools; nor at the Jews for Locusts and Grasshoppers; but being amongst them, make them my common Viands, and I find they agree with my Stomach as well as theirs. I could digest a Salad gathered in a Church-yard, as well as in a Garden. I cannot start at the presence of a Serpent, Scorpion, Lizard, or Salamander; at the sight of a Toad or Viper, I find in me no desire to take up a stone to destroy them. I feel not in my self those common Antipathies that I can discover in others: Those National repugnances do not touch me, nor do I behold with prejudice the *French*, *Italian*, *Spaniard* and *Dutch*; but where I find their actions in balance with my Country-men's, I honour, love, and embrace them in some degree. I was born in the eighth Climate, but seem for to be framed and constellated unto all: I am no Plant that will not prosper out of a Garden

Garden : All places, all airs make unto me one Countrey ; I am in *England*, every where, and under any Meridian. I have been shipwrackt, yet am not enemy with the Sea or Winds ; I can study, play, or sleep in a Tempest. In brief, I am averse from nothing, my Conscience would give me the lye if I should absolutely detest or hate any essence but the Devil ; or so at least abhor any thing, but that we might come to composition. If there be any among those common objects of hatred I do contemn and laugh at, it is that great enemy of Reason, Virtue and Religion, the Multitude ; that numerous piece of monstrosity, which taken asunder seem men, and the reasonable creatures of God ; but confused together, make but one great beast, and a monstrosity more prodigious then Hydra : it is no breach of Charity to call these Fools ; it is the style all holy Writers have afforded them, set down by *Salomon* in Canonical Scripture, and a point of our Faith to believe so. Neither in the name of Multitude do I onely



include the base and minor sort of people ; there is a rabble even amongst the Gentry, a sort of Plebeian heads, whose fancy moves with the same wheel as these ; men in the same Level with Mechanicks, though their fortunes do somewhat guild their infirmities, and their purses compound for their follies. But as in casting account, three or four men together come short in account of one man placed by himself below them : So neither are a troop of these ignorant Doradoes, of that true esteem and value, as many a forlorn person, whose condition doth place them below their feet. Let us speak like Politicians, there is a Nobility without Heraldry, a natural dignity, whereby one man is ranked with another ; another filed before him, according to the quality of his Desert, and preheminance of his good parts : Though the corruption of these times, and the byas of present practice wheel another way. Thus it was in the first and primitive Common-wealths, and is yet in the integrity and Cradle of well-order'd Politics,

Polities, till corruption getteth ground, ruder desires labouring after that which wiser considerations contemn; every one having a liberty to amass and heap up riches, and they a license or faculty to do or purchase any thing.

This general and indifferent temper of mine, doth more neerly dispose me to this noble virtue. It is a happiness to be born and framed unto virtue, and to grow up from the seeds of nature, rather than the inoculation and forced grafts of education: yet if we are directed only by our particular Natures, and regulate our inclinations by no higher rule than that of our reasons, we are but Moralists; Divinity will still call us Heathens. Therefore this great work of charity, must have other motives, ends, and impulsions; I give no alms only to satisfy the hunger of my Brother, but to fulfil and accomplish the Will and Command of my God; I draw not my purse for his sake that demands it, but his that enjoined it; I relieve no man upon the Rhetorick of his

miseries, nor to content mine own commiserating disposition: for this is still but moral charity, and an act that oweth more to passion than reason. He that relieves another upon the bare suggestion and bowels of pity, doth not this so much for his sake, as for his own: for by compassion we make others misery our own; and so by relieving them, we relieve our selves also. It is as erroneous a conceit to redress other Mens misfortunes upon the common considerations of merciful natures, that it may be one day our own case; for this is a sinister and politick kind of charity, whereby we seem to bespeak the pities of men in the like occasions: and truly I have observed that those professed Eleemosynaries, though in a croud or multitude, do yet direct and place their petitions on a few and selected persons: there is surely a Physiognomy, which those experienced and Master-Mendicants observe; whereby they instantly discover a merciful aspect, and will single out a face, wherein they spy the signatures and  
marks

marks of Mercy : for there are mystically in our faces certain Characters which carry in them the motto of our Souls, wherein he that can read *A.B.C.* may read our natures. I hold moreover that there is a Phytognomy, or Physiognomy, not only of Men, but of Plants and Vegetables ; and in every one of them, some outward figures which hang as signs or bushes of their inward forms. The Finger of God hath left an Inscription upon all his works, not graphical, or composed of Letters, but of their several forms, constitutions, parts, and operations ; which aptly joyned together do make one word that doth express their natures. By these Letters God calls the Stars by their names ; and by this Alphabet *Adam* assigned to every creature a name peculiar to its Nature. Now there are besides these Characters in our Faces, certain mystical figures in our Hands, which I dare not call meer dashes, strokes, *a la volée*, or at random, because delineated by a Pencil that never works in vain, and hereof I take more particular notice, because

cause I carry that in mine own hand, which I could never read of, nor discover in another. *Aristotle* I confess, in his acute, and singular Book of Physiognomy, hath made no mention of Chiromancy; yet I believe the *Egyptians*, who were neerer addicted to those abstruse and mystical sciences, had a knowledge therein; to which those vagabond and counterfeited *Egyptians* did after pretend, and perhaps retained a few corrupted principles, which sometimes might verifie their prognosticks.

It is the common wonder of all men, \* how among so many millions of faces, there should be none alike: ] Now contrary, I wonder as much how there should be any. He that shall consider how many thousand several words have been carelessly and without study composed out of 24 Letters; withal, how many hundred lines there are to be drawn in the Fabrick of one Man; shall easily find that this variety is necessary; And it will be very hard that they shall so concur, as to make one portrait like another. Let a Painter  
care,

carelessly limb out a million of Faces, and you shall find them all different ; yea let him have his Copy before him, yet after all his art there will remain a sensible distinction; for the pattern or example of every thing is the perfectest in that kind, whereof we still come short, though we transcend or go beyond it, because herein it is wide, and agrees not in all points unto the Copy. Nor doth the similitude of Creatures disparage the variety of Nature, nor any way confound the Works of God. For even in things alike there is diversity ; and those that do seem to accord, do manifestly disagree. And thus is man like God ; for in the same things that we resemble him, we are utterly different from him. There was never any thing so like another, as in all points to concur ; there will ever some reserved difference slip in, to prevent the identity, without which, two several things would not be alike, but the same, which is impossible.

But to return from Philosophy to *Señ. 3.*  
**Charity** : I hold not so narrow a conceit



ceit of this virtue, as to conceive that to give Alms, is onely to be Charitable, or think a piece of Liberality can comprehend the Total of Charity. Divinity hath wisely divided the acts thereof into many branches, and hath taught us in this narrow way, many paths unto goodness: as many ways as we may do good, so many ways we may be charitable: there are infirmities, not onely of Body, but of Soul and Fortunes, which do require the merciful hand of our abilities. I cannot contemn a man for ignorance, but behold him with as much pity as I do *Lazarus*. It is no greater Charity to cloath his body, than apparel the nakedness of his Soul. It is an honourable object to see the reasons of other men wear our Liveries, and their borrowed understandings do homage to the bounty of ours: It is the cheapest way of beneficence, and like the natural charity of the Sun, illuminates another without obscuring it self. To be reserved and caittiff in this part of goodness, is the fordidest piece of covetousness, and more  
con-

contemptible than pecuniary Avarice. To this (as calling my self a Scholar) I am obliged by the duty of my condition : I make not therefore my head a grave, but a treasure of knowledge ; I intend no Monopoly, but a community in learning ; I study not for my own sake only, but for theirs that study not for themselves. I envy no man that knows more than my self, but pity them that know less. I instruct no man as an exercise of my knowledge, or with an intent rather to nourish and keep it alive in mine own head, than beget and propagate it in his ; and in the midst of all my endeavours, there is but one thought that dejects me, that my acquired parts must perish with my self, nor can be Legacyed among my honoured Friends. I cannot fall out, or contemn a man for an errour, or conceive why a difference in Opinion should divide an affection : For Controversies, Disputes, and Argumentations, both in Philosophy, and in Divinity, if they meet with discreet and peaceable natures, do not infringe

infringe the Laws of Charity : in all disputes, so much as there is of passion, so much there is of nothing to the purpose, for then Reason, like a bad Hound, spends upon a false Sent, and forsakes the question first started. And this is one reason why Controversies are never determined, for though they be amply proposed, they are scarce at all handled, they do so swell with unnecessary Digressions, and the Parenthesis on the party, is often as large as the main discourse upon the subject. The Foundations of Religion are already established, and the Principles of Salvation subscribed unto by all ; there remains not many controversies worth a Passion, and yet never any disputed without, not only in Divinity, but inferiour Arts : \* What a *βατροχομνομαχία* and hot skirmish is betwixt *S.* and *T.* in *Lucian* : ] How do Grammarians hack and flash for the Genitive case in *Jupiter* ? How do they break their own pates, to salve that of *Priscian* ? *Si foret in terris, rideret Democritus.* Yea, even amongst wiser militants, how many wounds

wounds have been given, and credits slain, for the poor victory of an opinion, or beggerly conquest of a distinction? Scholars are men of Peace, they bear no Arms,|||but their tongues are sharper than *Actus* his razor;] their Pens carry farther, and give a lowder report than Thunder: I had rather stand the shock of a Basilisco, than the fury of a merciless Pen. It is not meer Zeal to Learning, or Devotion to the Muses, that wiser Princes Patron the Arts, and carry an indulgent aspect unto Scholars; but a desire to have their names eternized by the memory of their writings, and a fear of the revengeful Pen of succeeding ages: for these are the men, that when they have played their parts, and had their *exits*, must step out and give the moral of their Scenes, and deliver unto Posterity an Inventory of their Virtues and Vices. And surely there goes a great deal of Conscience to the compiling of an History: there is no reproach to the scandal of a Story; it is such an authentick kind of falsehood, that with authority belies our good names

Sect. 4.

names to all Nations and Posterity.

There is another offence unto Charity, which no Author hath ever written of, and few take notice of, and that's the reproach, not of whole professions, mysteries and conditions, but of whole Nations; wherein by opprobrious Epithets we miscale each other, and by an uncharitable Logick, from a disposition in a few, conclude a habit in all.

*Le mutin Anglois, & le bravache Escossois ;  
Le bougre Italian, et le fol Francois ;  
Le Poultron Romani, le larron de Gascongne,  
L'Espagnol superbe, & l'Aleman yurongne.*

\* St. Paul, that calls the Cretians lyars, doth it but indirectly, and upon quotation of their own Poet.]

|| It is as bloody a thought in one way, as Nero's was in another. For by a word we wound a thousand,] and at one blow assassine the honour of a Nation. It is as compleat a piece of madness to miscale and rave against the times; or think to recal men to reason, by a fit of passion: Democritus, that thought to laugh the times into goodness, seems to me

as

as deeply Hypochondriack, as *Heraclitus* that bewailed them. It moves not my spleen to behold the multitude in their proper humours, that is, in their fits of folly and madness, as well understanding that wisdom is not prophan'd unto the World, and 'tis the priviledge of a few to be Vertuous. They that endeavour to abolish Vice, destroy also Virtue, for contraries, though they destroy one another; are yet in life of one another. Thus Virtue (abolish vice) is an Idea: again, the community of sin doth not disparage goodness; for when Vice gains upon the major part, Virtue, in whom it remains, becomes more excellent; and being lost in some, multiplies its goodness in others, which remain untouched, and persist intire in the general inundation. I can therefore behold Vice without a Satyr, content only with an admonition, or instructive reprehension, for Noble Natures, and such as are capable of goodness, are railed into vice, that might as easily be admonished into virtue, and we should be all so far the Ora-



tors of goodness, as to protract her from the power of Vice, and maintain the cause of injured truth. No man can justly censure or condemn another, because indeed no man truly knows another. This I perceive in my self; for I am in the dark to all the world, and my nearest friends behold me but in a cloud: those that know me but superficially, think less of me than I do of my self; those of my neer acquaintance think more: God, who truly knows me, knows that I am nothing; for he only beholds me, and all the world; who looks not on us through a derived ray, or a trajection of a sensible species, but beholds the substance without the helps of accidents, and the forms of things, as we their operations. Further, no man can judge another, because no man knows himself; for we censure others but as they disagree from that humour which we fancy laudible in our selves, and commend others but for that wherein they seem to quadrate and consent with us. So that in conclusion, all is but that we all condemn,

condem, Self-love. 'Tis the general complaint of these times, and perhaps of those past, that charity grows cold; which I perceive most verified in those which most do manifest the fires and flames of zeal; for it is a virtue that best agrees with coldest natures, and such as are complexioned for humility. But how shall we expect Charity towards others, when we are uncharitable to our selves? Charity begins at home, is the voice of the World; yet is every man his greatest enemy, and as it were, his own Executioner. *Non occides*, is the Commandment of God, yet scarce observed by any man; for I perceive every man is his own *Atropos*, and lends a hand to cut the thred of his own days. *Cain* was not therefore the first Murtherer, but *Adam*, who brought in death; whereof he beheld the practice and example in his own son *Abel*, and saw that verified in the experience of another, which faith could not perswade him in the Theory of himself.

There is, I think, no man that ap- *Sect. 3.*

prehends his own miseries less than my self, and no man that so neerly apprehends anothers. I could lose an arm without a tear, and with few groans, methinks, be quartered into pieces; yet can I weep most seriously at a Play, and receive with true passion, the counterfeit grief of those known and professed Impostures. It is a barbarous part of inhumanity to add unto any afflicted parties misery, or indeavour to multiply in any man, a passion, whose single nature is already above his patience: this was the greatest affliction of *Job*; and those oblique expostulations of his Friends, a deeper injury than the down-right blows of the Devil. It is not the tears of our own eyes only, but of our friends also, that do exhaust the current of our sorrows; which falling into many streams, runs more peaceably, and is contented with a narrower channel. It is an act within the power of charity, to translate a passion out of one brest into another, and to divide a sorrow almost out of it self; for an affliction, like a dimen-

dimension, may be so divided, as if not indivisible, at least to become insensible. Now with my friend I desire not to share or participate, but to engross his sorrows, that by making them mine own, I may more easily discuss them; for in mine own reason, and within my self, I can command that, which I cannot intreat without my self, and within the circle of another. I have often thought those noble pairs and examples of friendship not so truly Histories of what had been, as fictions of what should be; but I now perceive nothing in them but possibilities, nor any thing in the Heroick examples of *Damon* and *Pythias*, *Achilles* and *Patroclus*, which methinks upon some grounds I could not perform within the narrow compass of my self. That a man should lay down his life for his Friend, seems strange to vulgar affections, and such as confine themselves within that Worldly principle, Charity begins at home. For my own part, I could never remember the relations that I held unto my self, nor the respect

that I owe unto my own nature, in the cause of God, my Country, and my Friends. Next to these three I do embrace my self: I confess I do not observe that order that the Schools ordain our affections, to love our Parents, Wives, Children, and then our Friends; for excepting the injunctions of Religior, I do not find in my self such a necessary and indissoluble Sympathy to all those of my blood. I hope I do not break the fifth Commandment, if I conceive I may love my friend before the nearest of my blood, even those to whom I owe the principles of life: I never yet cast a true affection on a woman, but I have loved my friend as I do virtue, my soul, my God. From hence me thinks I do conceive how God loves man, what happiness there is in the love of God. Omitting all other, there are three most mystical unions; two natures in one person; three persons in one nature; one soul in two bodies. For though indeed they be really divided, yet are they so united, as they seem but one, and make rather a duality

duality than two distinct souls.

There are wonders in true affection; it is a body of *Enigma's*, mysteries and riddles; wherein two so become one, as they both become two: I love my friend before, my self, and yet methinks I do not love him enough: some few months hence, my multiplied affection will make me believe I have not loved him at all: when I am from him, I am dead till I be with him; when I am with him, I am not satisfied, but would still be nearer him. United souls are not satisfied with imbraces, but desire to be truly each other; which being impossible, their desires are infinite, and proceed without a possibility of satisfaction. Another misery there is in affection, that whom we truly love like our own, we forget their looks, nor can our memory retain the Idea of their faces; and it is no wonder: for they are our selves, and our affection makes their looks our own. This noble affection falls not on vulgar and common constitutions, but on such as are mark'd for virtue: he

*Sett. 6.*



that can love his friend with this noble ardour, will in a competent degree effect all. Now if we can bring our affections to look beyond the body, and cast an eye upon the soul, we have found out the true object, not only of friendship, but Charity; and the greatest happiness that we can bequeath the soul, is that wherein we all do place our last felicity, Salvation; which though it be not in our power to bestow, it is in our charity, and pious invocations to desire, if not procure and further. I cannot contentedly frame a prayer for my self in particular, without a catalogue for my friends; nor request a happiness wherein my sociable disposition doth not desire the fellowship of my neighbour. I never hear the Toll of a passing Bell, though in my mirth, without my prayers and best wishes for the departing spirit: I cannot go to cure the body of my patient, but I forget my profession, and call unto God for his soul: I cannot see one say his prayers, but in stead of imitating him, I fall into a supplication for

for him, who perhaps is no more to me than a common nature: and if God hath vouchsafed an ear to my supplications, there are surely many happy that never saw me, and enjoy the blessing of mine unknown devotions. To pray for Enemies, that is, for their salvation, is no harsh precept, but the practice of our daily and ordinary devotions. \*I cannot believe the story of the Italian;] our bad wishes and uncharitable desires proceed no further than this life; it is the Devil, and the uncharitable votes of Hell, that desire our misery in the World to come.

To do no injury, nor take none, *Sect. 7.* was a principle, which to my former years, and impatient affections, seemed to contain enough of Morality; but my more settled years, and Christian constitution, have fallen upon severer resolutions. I can hold there is no such thing as injury; that if there be, there is no such injury as revenge, and no such revenge as the contempt of an injury; that to hate another, is to malign himself; that the truest way to love another, is to despise

despise our selves. I were unjust unto mine own Conscience, if I should say I am at variance with any thing like my self. I find there are many pieces in this one fabrick of man ; this frame is raised upon a mass of Antipathies: I am one methinks, but as the World ; wherein notwithstanding there are a swarm of distinct essences, and in them another World of contrarieties ; we carry private and domestick enemies within, publick and more hostile adversaries without. The Devil, that did but buffet St. *Paul*, plays methinks at sharp with me. Let me be nothing, if within the compass of my self, I do not find the battail of *Lepanto*, Passion against Reason, Reason against Faith, Faith against the Devil, and my Conscience against all. There is another man within me, that's angry with me, rebukes, commands, and dastards me. I have no Conscience of Marble, to resist the hammer of more heavy offences ; nor yet too soft and waxen, as to take the impression of each single peccadillo or scape of infirmity : I  
am

am of a strange belief, that it is as easie to be forgiven some sins, as to commit some others. For my Original sin, I hold it to be washed away in my Baptism; for my actual transgressions, I compute and reckon with God, but from my last repentance, Sacrament, or general absolution; and therefore am not terrified with the sins or madness of my youth. I thank the goodness of God, \* I have no sins that want a name,] I am not singular in offences; my transgressions are Epidemical, and from the common breath of our corruption. For there are certain tempers of body, which matcht with an humorous depravity of mind, do hatch and produce vitiosities, whose newness and monstrosity of nature admits no name; || this was the temper of that Lecher that carnal'd with a Statua,] \* and constitution of *Nero* in his Spintrian recreations.] For the Heavens are not only fruitful in new and unheard-of stars, the Earth in plants and animals; but mens minds also in villany and vices: now the dulness of my reason, and  
the

the vulgarity of my disposition, never prompted my invention, nor solicited my affection unto any of those ; yet even those common and quotidian infirmities that so necessarily attend me, and do seem to be my very nature , have so dejected me, so broken the estimation that I should have otherwise of my self, that I repute my self the most abjectest piece of mortality. Divines prescribe a fit of sorrow to repentance ; there goes indignation, anger, sorrow, hatred, into mine ; passions of a contrary nature, which neither seem to suite with this action, nor my proper constitution. It is no breach of charity to our selves, to be at variance with our Vices ; nor to abhor that part of us, which is an enemy to the ground of charity, our God ; wherein we do but imitate our great selves the world, whose divided Antipathies and contrary faces do yet carry a charitable regard unto the whole by their particular discords, preserving the common harmony, and keeping in fetters those powers, whose rebellions  
once

once Masters, might be the ruine of all.

I thank God, amongst those millions of Vices I do inherit and hold from *Adam*, I have escaped one, and that a mortal enemy to Charity, the first and farther-sin, not onely of man, but of the devil, Pride; a vice whose name is comprehended in a Monosyllable, but in its nature not circumscribed with a World. I have escaped it in, a condition that can hardly avoid it. Those petty acquisitions and reputed perfections that advance and elevate the conceits of other men, add no feathers unto mine. \* I have seen a Grammarian tower and plume himself over a single line in *Horace*,] and shew more pride in the construction of one Ode, than the Author in the composition of the whole book. For my own part, besides the *Jargon* and *Patois* of several Provinces, I understand no less than six Languages; yet I protest I have no higher conceit of my self, than had our Fathers before the confusion of *Babel*, when there was but one Language in the World,

*Seet. 8.*



World, and none to boast himself either Linguist or Critick. I have not onely seen several Countries, beheld the nature of their Climes, the Chorography of their Provinces, Topography of their Cities, but understood their several Laws, Customs and Policies; yet cannot all this perswade the dulness of my spirit unto such an opinion of my self, as I behold in nimbler and conceited heads, that never looked a degree beyond their Nests. I know the names, and somewhat more, of all the constellations in my Horizon; yet I have seen a prating Mariner, that could onely name the pointers and the North Star, out-talk me, and conceit himself a whole Sphere above me. I know most of the Plants of my Countrey, and of those about me; yet methinks I do not know so many as when I did but know a hundred, and had scarcely ever Simpled further than *Cheap-side*. For indeed, heads of capacity, and such as are not full with a handful, or easie measure of knowledge, think they know nothing, till they know all; which

which being impossible, they fall upon the opinion of *Socrates*, and only know they know not any thing. \* I cannot think that *Homer* piur'd away upon the riddle of the fisherman,] or || that *Aristotle*, who understood the uncertainty of knowledge, and confessed so often the reason of man too weak for the works of nature, did ever drown himself upon the flux and reflux of *Euripus*.] We do but learn to day, what our better advanced judgements will unteach to morrow: and || *Aristotle* doth not instruct us, as *Plato* did him; that is, to confute himself.] I have run through all sorts, yet find no rest in any: though our first studies and *junior* endeavours may style us Peripateticks, Stoicks, or Academics, yet I perceive the wisest heads prove, at last, almost all Scepticks, and stand like *Janus* in the field of knowledge. I have therefore one common and authentick Philosophy I learned in the Schools, whereby I discourse and satisfy the reason of other men; another more reserved, and drawn from experience, where-

whereby I content mine own. *Solomon*, that complained of ignorance in the height of knowledge, hath not only humbled my conceits, but discouraged my endeavours. There is yet another conceit that hath sometimes made me shut my books, which tells me it is a vanity to waste our days in the blind pursuit of knowledge; it is but attending a little longer, and we shall enjoy that by instinct and infusion, which we endeavour at hereby labour and inquiry. It is better to sit down in a modest ignorance; and rest contented with the natural blessing of our own reasons, than buy the uncertain knowledge of this life, with sweat and vexation, which Death gives every fool *gratis*, and is an accessory of our glorification.

*Sett. 9.* I was never yet once, and commend their resolutions who never marry twice: not that I disallow of second marriage; as neither in all cases of Polygamy, which considering sometimes, and the unequal number of both sexes, may be also necessary. The whole World was made for  
man,

man, but the twelfth part of man for woman : Man is the whole World, and the Breath of God ; Woman the Rib, and crooked piece of man. \* I could be content that we might procreate like trees] without conjunction, or that there were any way to perpetuate the world without this trivial and vulgar way of coition ; it is the foolishhest act a wise man commits in all his life, nor is there any thing that will more deject his cool'd imagination, when he shall consider what an odd and unworthy piece of folly he hath committed. I speak not in prejudice, nor am averse from that sweet Sex, but naturally amorous of all that is beautiful ; I can look a whole day with delight upon a handsome Picture, though it be but of an Horse. It is my temper, and I like it the better, to affect all harmony ; and sure there is musick even in the beauty, and the silent note which *Cupid* strikes, far sweeter than the sound of an instrument. For there is a musick where ever there is a harmony, order or proportion ;  
M and

and thus far we may maintain the musick of the Sphears: for those well-ordered motions, and regular paces, though they give no sound unto the ear, yet to the understanding they strike a note most full of harmony. Whosoever is harmonically composed, delights in harmony; which makes me much distrust the symmetry of those heads which declaim against all Church-Musick. For my self, not only from my obedience, but my particular genius, I do embrace it: for even that vulgar and Tavern-Musick, which makes one man merry, another mad, strikes in me a deep fit of devotion, and a profound contemplation of the first Composer. There is something in it of Divinity more than the ear discovers: it is an Hieroglyphical and shadowed lesson of the whole world, and creatures of God; such a melody to the ear, as the whole world well understood, would afford the understanding. In brief, it is a sensible fit of that harmony, which intellectually sounds in the ears of God.

I will not say with *Plato*, the soul is an harmony, but harmonical, and hath its nearest sympathy unto Musick: thus some whose temper of body agrees, and humours the constitution of their souls, are born Poets, though indeed all are naturally inclined unto Rhythme. || This made *Tacitus* in the very first line of his Story, fall upon a verse; and *Cicero* the worst of Poets, but \* de-claiming for a Poet, falls in the very first sentence upon a perfect || Hexameter. I feel not in me those sordid and unchristian desires of my profession; I do not secretly implore and wish for Plagues, rejoyce at Famines, revolve Ephemerides and Almanacks, in expectation of malignant Aspects, fatal Conjunctions and Eclipses: I rejoyce not at unwholesome Springs, nor unseasonable Winters; my Prayer goes with the Husbandman's; I desire every thing in its proper season, that neither men nor the times be put out of temper. Let me be sick my self, if sometimes the malady of my pati-

† *urbem Ro-*

*nam in*

*principio*

*Reges ha-*

*buere.*

\* *Pro Ar-*

*chia Poeta.*

† *In qua me*

*non inficior*

*mediocriter*

*esse.*



ent be not a disease unto me ; I desire rather to cure his infirmities than my own necessities : where I do him no good, methinks it is scarce honest gain ; though I confess 'tis but the worthy salary of our well-intended endeavours. I am not only ashamed, but heartily sorry , that besides death, there are diseases incurable ; yet not for my own sake, or that they be beyond my Art, but for the general cause and sake of humanity, whose common cause I apprehend as mine own. And to speak more generally, those three Noble Professions which all civil Common-wealths do honour, are raised upon the fall of *Adam*, and are not exempt from their infirmities ; there are not only diseases incurable in Physick, but cases indissolvable in Laws, Vices incorrigible in Divinity : if general Councils may err, I do not see why particular Courts should be infallible ; their perfectest rules are raised upon the erroneous reasons of Man ; and the Laws of one, do but condemn the rules of another ;

as *Aristotle* oft-times the opinions of his Predecessours, because, though agreeable to reason, yet were not consonant to his own rules, and Logick of his proper Principles. Again, to speak nothing of the Sin against the Holy Ghost, whose cure not onely, but whose nature is unknown, I can cure the Gout or Stone in some, sooner than Divinity Pride or Avarice in others. I can cure Vices by Physick, when they remain incurable by Divinity; and shall obey my Pills, when they condemn their precepts. I boast nothing, but plainly say, we all labour against our own cure; for death is the cure of all diseases. There is no Catholicon or universal remedy I know but this, which though nauseous to queasie stomachs, yet to prepared appetites is Nectar, and a pleasant potion of immortality.

For my Conversation, it is like the *Sect. 10.*  
 Sun's, with all men, and with a friendly aspect to good and bad. Methinks there is no man bad, and the worst, best; that is, while they

are kept within the circle of those qualities, wherein they are good: there is no mans mind of such discordant and jarring a temper, to which a tunable disposition may not strike a harmony. *Magna virtutes, nec minora vitia*; it is the posie of the best natures, \* and may be inverted on the worst; ] there are in the most depraved and venemous dispositions, certain pieces that remain untoucht, which by an *Antiperistasis* become more excellent, or by the excellency of their antipathies are able to preserve themselves from the contagion of their enemy vices, and persist intire beyond the general corruption. For it is also thus in nature. The greatest Balsomes do lie enveloped in the bodies of most powerful Corrosives; I say moreover, and I ground upon experience, \* that poisons contain within themselves their own Antidote, ] and that which preserves them from the venom of themselves, without which they were not deleterious to others onely, but to themselves also. But it

is the corruption that I fear within me, not the contagion of commerce without me. 'Tis that unruly regiment within me, that will destroy me; 'tis I that do infect my self, || the man without a Navel yet lives in me; ] I feel that original canker corrode and devour me; and therefore *Defenda me Dios de me*, Lord deliver me from my self, is a part of my Letany, and the first voice of my retired imaginations. There is no man alone, because every man is a *Microcosm*, and carries the whole world about him; *Nunquam minus solus quàm cum solus*, though it be the Apophthegme of a wise man, is yet true in the mouth of a fool; indeed, though in a Wilderness, a man is never alone, not only because he is with himself, and his own thoughts, but because he is with the Devil; who ever consorts with our solitude, and is that unruly rebel that musters up those disordered motions which accompany our sequestred imaginations. And to speak more narrowly, there is no

such thing as solitude, nor any thing that can be said to be alone, and by it self, but God, who is his own circle, and can subsist by himself; all others, besides their dissimilary and Heterogeneous parts, which in a manner multiply their natures, cannot subsist without the concurrence of God, and the society of that hand which doth uphold their natures. In brief, there can be nothing truly alone, and by its self, which is not truly one; and such is only God: All others do transcend an unity, and so by consequence are many.

*Sect. II.*

Now for my life, it is a miracle of thirty years, which to relate, were not a History, but a piece of Poetry, and would sound to common ears like a Fable; for the world, I count it not an Inn, but an Hospital; and a place, not to live, but to dye in. The world that I regard is my self; it is the Microcosm of my own frame that I cast mine eye on; for the other, I use it but like my Globe, and turn it round sometimes for my recreation. Men that look upon my  
out;

outside, perusing only my condition and Fortunes, do err in my Altitude; for I am above *Atlas* his shoulders. The earth is a point not only in respect of the Heavens above us, but of that heavenly and celestial part within us: that mass of Flesh that circumscribes me, limits not my mind: that surface that tells the Heavens it hath an end, cannot persuade me I have any: I take my circle to be above three hundred and sixty; though the number of the Ark do measure my body, it comprehendeth not my mind: whilst I study to find how I am a Microcosm or little world, I find my self something more than the great. There is surely a piece of Divinity in us, something that was before the Elements, and owes no homage unto the Sun. Nature tells me I am the Image of God, as well as Scripture: he that understands not thus much, hath not his introduction or first lesson, and is yet to begin the Alphabet of man. Let me not injure the felicity of others, if I say I am as happy as any;

*Ruat*



*Ruat cælum, Fiat voluntas tua,* saveth all; so that whatsoever happens, it is but what our daily prayers desire. In brief, I am content, and what should providence add more? Surely this is it we call Happiness, and this do I enjoy; with this I am happy in a dream, and as content to enjoy a happiness in a fancy, as others in a more apparent truth and realty. There is surely a neerer apprehension of any thing that delights us in our dreams, than in our waked senses; without this I were unhappy: for my awaked judgment discontents me, ever whispering unto me, that I am from my friend; but my friendly dreams in night requite me, and make me think I am within his arms. I thank God for my happy dreams, as I do for my good rest, for there is a satisfaction unto reasonable desires, and such as can be content with a fit of happiness. And surely it is not a melancholy conceit to think we are all asleep in this world, and that the conceits of this life are as meer dreams

to

to those of the next, as the Phantoms of the night, to the conceits of the day. There is an equal delusion in both, and the one doth but seem to be the embleme or picture of the other; we are somewhat more than our selves in our sleeps, and the slumber of the body seems to be but the waking of the soul. It is the ligation of sense, but the liberty of reason, and our waking conceptions do not match the Fancies of our sleeps. At my Nativity, my Ascendant was the watery sign of *Scorpius*; I was born in the Planetary hour of *Saturn*, and I think I have a piece of that Leaden Planet in me. I am no way facetious, nor disposed for the mirth and galliardize of company; yet in one dream I can compose a whole Comedy, behold the action, apprehend the justs, and laugh my self awake at the conceits thereof: were my memory as faithful as my reason is then fruitful, I would never study but in my dreams; and this time also would I chuse for my devotions: but

\* our

\*our groſſer memories have then ſo little hold of our abſtracted underſtandings, that they forget the ſtory,] and can only relate to our awaked ſouls, a confuſed and broken tale of that that hath paſſed. *Ariſtotle*, who hath written a ſingular Tract of Sleep, hath not methinks throughly defined it; nor yet *Galen*, though he ſeem to have corrected it: for thoſe *Noctambuloes* and night-walkers, though in their ſleep, do yet enjoy the action of their ſenſes: we muſt therefore ſay that there is ſomething in us that is not in the jurisdiction of *Morpheus*; and that thoſe abſtracted and ecſtatick ſouls do walk about in their own corps, as ſpirits with the bodies they aſſume; wherein they ſeem to hear, and feel, though indeed the Organs are deſtitute of ſenſe, and their natures of thoſe faculties that ſhould inform them. Thus it is obſerved, that men ſometimes upon the hour of their departure, do ſpeak and reaſon above themſelves, For then the ſoul beginning to be freed

freed from the ligaments of the body, begins to reason like her self, and to discourse in a strain above mortality.

We term sleep a death, and yet *See. 12.* it is waking that kills us, and destroys those spirits that are the house of life. 'Tis indeed a part of life that best expresseth death ; for every man truly lives, so long as he acts his nature, or someway makes good the faculties of himself: *Themistocles* therefore that slew his Soldier in his sleep, was a merciful Executioner ; 'tis a kind of punishment the mildness of no laws hath invented ; \* I wonder the fancy of *Lucan* and *Seneca* did not discover it.] It is that death by which we may be literally said to dye daily ; a death which *Adam* dyed before his mortality ; a death whereby we live a middle and moderating point between life and death ; in fine, so like death, I dare not trust it without my prayers, and an half adieu unto the world, and take my farewell in a Colloquy with God.

*The*

The night is come, like to the day ;  
 Depart not thou great God away.  
 Let not my sins, black as the night,  
 Eclipse the lustre of thy light.  
 Keep still in my Horizon ; for to me  
 The Sun makes not the day, but thee.  
 Thou whose nature cannot sleep,  
 On my temples centry keep ;  
 Guard me 'gainst those watchful foes,  
 Whose eyes are open while mine close.  
 Let no dreams my head infest,  
 But such as Jacob's temples blest.  
 While I do rest, my Soul advance ;  
 Make my sleep a holy trance :  
 That I may, my rest being wrought,  
 Awake into some holy thought ;  
 And with as active vigour run  
 My course, as doth the nimble Sun.  
 Sleep is a death ; O make me try,  
 By sleeping, what it is to die :  
 And as gently lay my head  
 On my grave, as now my bed.  
 Howere I rest, great God, let me  
 Awake again at least with thee.  
 And thus assur'd, behold I lie  
 Securely, or to awake or die.  
 These are my drowsie days ; in vain  
 I do now wake to sleep again :  
 O come that hour, when I shall never  
 Sleep again, but wake for ever.

This

This is the Dormative I take to bedward ; I need no other *Laudanum* than this to make me sleep ; after which, I close mine eyes in security, content to take my leave of the Sun, and sleep unto the resurrection.

The method I should use in distributive justice, I often observe in commutative ; and keep a Geometrical proportion in both ; whereby becoming equable to others, I become unjust to my self, and supererogate in that common principle, *Do unto others as thou wouldst be done unto thy self.* I was not born unto riches, neither is it I think my Star to be wealthy ; or if it were, the freedom of my mind, and frankness of my disposition, were able to contradict and cross my fates. For to me avarice seems not so much a vice, as a deplorable piece of madness ; \* to conceive our selves Urinals, or be perswaded that we are dead, is not so ridiculous,] nor so many degrees beyond the power of Hellebore, as this. The opinion of Theory, and positions of men, are  
not



not so void of reason, as their practised conclusions: some have held that Snow is black, that the earth moves, that the Soul is air, fire, water; but all this is Philosophy, and there is no *delirium*, if we do but speculate the folly and indisputable dotage of avarice, to that subterraneous Idol, and God of the Earth. I do confess I am an Atheist; I cannot perswade my self to honour that the world adores; whatsoever vertue its prepared substance may have within my body, it hath no influence nor operation without: I would not entertain a base design, or an action that should call me villain, for the Indies; and for this only do I love and honour my own soul, and have methinks two arms too few to embrace my self. *Aristotle* is too severe, that will not allow us to be truly liberal without wealth, and the bountiful hand of Fortune; if this be true, I must confess I am charitable only in my liberal intentions, and bountiful well-wishes. But if the example

ample of the Mite be not only an act of wonder, but an example of the noblest Charity, surely poor men may also build Hospitals, and the rich alone have not erected Cathedrals. I have a private method which others observe not; I take the opportunity of my self to do good; I borrow occasion of Charity from mine own necessities, and supply the wants of others, when I am in most need my self; for it is an honest stratagem to make advantage of our selves, and so to husband the acts of vertue, that where they were defective in one circumstance, they may repay their want, and multiply their goodness in another. I have not *Penn* in my desires, but a competence, and ability to perform those good works, to which he hath inclined my nature. He is rich, who hath enough to be charitable; and it is hard to be so poor, that a noble mind may not find a way to this piece of goodness. *He that giveth to the poor, lendeth to the Lord*; there is more Rhetorick in that one sentence, than in a Library.

of Sermons ; and indeed if those Sentences were understood by the Reader , with the same Emphasis as they are delivered by the Author, we needed not those Volumes of instructions, but might be honest by an Epitome. Upon this motive only I cannot behold a Beggar without relieving his Necessities with my Purse, or his Soul with my Prayers ; these scenical and accidental differences between us, cannot make me forget that common and untoucht part of us both ; there is under these *Cantos* and miserable outsides, these mutilate and semi-bodies, a soul of the same alloy with our own, whose Genealogy is Gods as well as ours, and is as fair a way to Salvation as our selves. Statists that labour to contrive a Common-wealth without our poverty, take away the object of charity, not understanding only the Common-wealth of a Christian, but forgetting the prophecie of Christ.

*Señ. 14.*

Now there is another part of charity, which is the Basis and Pillar of this, and that is the love of God, for whom we love our neighbour ;  
for

for this I think charity, to love God for himself, and our neighbour for God. All that is truly amiable is God, or as it were a divided piece of him, that retains a reflex or shadow of himself. Nor is it strange that we should place affection on that which is invisible; all that we truly love is thus; what we adore under affection of our senses, deserves not the honour of so pure a title. Thus we adore virtue, though to the eyes of sense she be invisible: Thus that part of our noble friends that we love, is not that part that we embrace, but that insensible part that our arms cannot embrace. God being all goodness, can love nothing but himself, and the traduction of his holy Spirit. Let us call to assize the loves of our parents, the affection of our wives and children, and they are all dumb shows and dreams, without realty, truth or constancy: for first, there is a strong bond of affection between us and our parents; yet how easily dissolved? We betake our selves to a woman, forget our mother in a wife, and the

womb that bare us, in that that shall bear our Image: this woman blessing us with children, our affection leaves the level it held before, and sinks from our bed unto our issue and picture of Posterity, where affection holds no steady mansion. They, growing up in years, desire our ends; or applying themselves to a woman, take a lawful way to love another better than our selves. Thus I perceive a man may be buried alive, and behold his grave in his own issue.

*Self. 15.* I conclude therefore and say, there is no happiness under (or as *Copernicus* will have it, above) the Sun, nor any Crambe in that repeated verity and burthen of all the wisdom of *Solomon*, *All is vanity and vexation of Spirit*. There is no felicity in that the world adores: *Aristotle* whilst he labours to refute the Idea's of *Plato*, falls upon one himself: for his *summum bonum* is a *Chimera*, and there is no such thing as his Felicity. That wherein God himself is happy, the holy Angels are happy, in whose defect the Devils are unhappy; that dare

dare I call happiness : whatsoever conduceth unto this, may with an easie Metaphor deserve that name ; whatsoever else the World terms Happiness, is to me a story out of *Pliny*, a tale of *Boccace* or *Malizspini* ; an apparition or neat delusion, wherein there is no more of Happiness, than the name. Bless me in this life with but peace of my Conscience, command of my affections, the love of thy self and my dearest friends, and I shall be happy enough to pity *Cesar*. These are, O Lord, the humble desires of my most reasonable ambition, and all I dare call happiness on earth ; wherein I set no rule or limit to thy Hand of Providence ; dispose of me according to the wisdom of thy pleasure. \*Thy will be done, though in my own undoing.]

*FINIS.*





ANNOTATIONS  
UPON  
*RELIGIO MEDICI.*

---

*Nec satis est vulgasse fidem.*

Pet. Arbit. fragment.

---



---

LONDON:  
Printed for R. Scot, T. Basset,  
J. Wright, R. Chiswel. 1677.

ANNOTATIONS

RELIGIO MEDICI

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE

LONDON:

Printed for R. and J. D. 1711.  
J. M. 1711.



THE  
ANNOTATOR  
TO THE  
READER.

**A**. Gellius (noct. Attic. l. 20. cap. ult.) *notes some Books that had strange Titles ; Pliny (Præfat. Nat. Hist.) speaking of some such , could not pass them over without a jeer ; So strange (saith he) are the Titles of some Books, Ut multos ad vadimonium deferendum compellant. And Seneca saith , Some such there are, Qui patri ostetricem parturienti filiæ accercenti moram injicere possint. Of the same fate this present Tract Religio Medici hath partaken : Exception by some hath been taken to it in respect of its Inscription, which, say they, seems to imply that Physicians have a Religion by themselves, which is more than Theologie doth warrant : but it is their Inference, and not the Title, that is to blame ;*  
for

# The Annotator

*for no more is meant by that, or endeavoured to be prov'd in the Book, then that (contrary to the opinion of the unlearned,) Physitians have Religion as well as other men.*

\* In his  
Medicus  
Medicatus.

*For the Work it self, the present Age hath produced none that has had better Reception amongst the learned ; it has been received and fostered by almost all, there having been but one that I know of (to verifie that Books have their fates from the Capacity of the Reader) that has had the face to appear against it ; that is Mr. Alexander \* Rolfe ; but he is dead, and it is uncomely to skirmish with his shadow. It shall be sufficient to remember to the Reader, that the noble and most learned Knight, Sir Kenelm Digby, has delivered his Opinion of it in another sort. who though in some things he differ from the Authors sense, yet hath he most candidly and ingeniously allow'd it to be a very learned and excellent Piece ; and I think no Scholar will say there can be an approbation more authentique. Since the time he published his Observations upon it, one Mr. Jo. Merryweather a Master*

## to the Reader.

Master of Arts of the University of  
 Cambridge, hath deem'd it worthy to  
 be put into the universal Language,  
 which about the year 1644. he per-  
 formed; and that hath carryed the  
 Authors name not only into the Low-  
 Countries and France (in both which  
 places the Book in Latin hath since  
 been Printed) but into Italy and  
 Germany; and in Germany it has  
 since fallen into the hands of a Gentle-  
 man of that Nation \* (of his Name \* That he  
 he hath given us no more than L. N. was a Ger-  
 M. E. N.) who hath written learned man, ap-  
 Annotations upon it in Latin, which pears by  
 were Printed together with the Book his Notes,  
 at Strasbourg, 1652. And for the ge- Pag. 35.  
 neral good Opinion the World had where he  
 entertained both of the Work and words,  
 Author, this Stranger tells you: \* In- *Dulcissima*  
 ter alios Auctores incidi in librum *nostra Ger-*  
 cui Titulus *Religio Medici*, jam an- *mania, &c.*  
 te mihi innotuerat lectionem istius \* In Præ-  
 libri multos præclaros viros dele- fat. Anno-  
 ctasse, imo occupasse. Non igno- tat.  
 rabam librum in *Anglia, Gallia, Ita-*  
*lia, Belgio, Germania* cupidissime  
 legi; constabat mihi eum non solum  
 in *Anglia ac Batavia*, set & *Parisiis*  
 cum



## The Annotator

cum præfatione, in qua Auctor magnis laudibus fertur esse, Typis mandatum Compertum mihi erat, multos magnos atq; eruditos viros censere Autorem (quantum ex hoc scripto perspicui potest) sanctitatæ vitæ ac pietate elucere, &c. *But for the worth of the Book, it is so well known to every English-man that is fit to read it, that this attestation of a Forrainer may seem superfluous.*

*The German, to do him right, hath in his Annotations given a fair specimen of his learning, shewing his skill in the Languages, as well antient as modern; as also his acquaintance with all manner of Authors, both sacred and profane, out of which he has amass'd a world of Quotations: but yet, not to mention that he hath not observed some Errors of the Press, and one or two main ones of the Latine Translation, whereby the Author is much injured; it cannot be denyed but he hath pass'd over many hard places untoucht, that might deserve a Note; that he hath made Annotations on some, where no need was; in the explication of others hath gone besides the true sense.*

[And

## to the Reader.

[*And were we free from all these, yet one great Fault there is, he may be justly charg'd with, that is, that he cannot manum de Tabula even in matters the most obvious: which is an affectation ill-becoming a Scholar; witness the most learned Annotator, Claud. Minos. Divion. in præfat. commentar. Alciat. Emblematis. præfix. Præstat (saith he) brevius omnia persequi, & leviter attingere quæ nemini esse ignota suspicari possint, quam quasi παρὰ τὸν, perq; locos communes identidem ex patiari.*

*I go not about by finding fault with his, obliquely to commend my own; I am as far from that, as 'tis possible others will be: All I seek, by this Preface, next to acquainting the Reader with the various entertainment of the Book, is, that he would be advertized, that these Notes were collected ten*

*\* years since, long before the German's* \* *Excepting two or three Particulars, in which reference is made to some Books that came over since that time.*

*were written; so that I am no Plagiary (as who peruseth his Notes and mine will easily perceive: ) And in the second place, that I made this Recuil merely for mine own entertainment, and not with any invention to evulge it; Truth*

## The Annotator, &c.

is my witness, the publication proceeds  
meerly from the importunity of the  
Book-seller (my special friend) who be-  
ing acquainted with what I had done,  
and about to set out another Edition of  
the Book, would not be denied these  
Notes to attex to it; 'tis he (not I,)  
that divulgeth it, and whatever the suc-  
cess be, he alone is concern'd in it; I on-  
ly say for my self what my Annotations  
bear in the Frontispiece,

*Nec satis est vulgasse fidem ———*  
That is, that it was not enough to all  
persons (though pretenders to Learn-  
ing) that our Physitian had publish'd  
his Creed, because it wanted an ex-  
position. I say further, that the Ger-  
man's is not full, and that (———  
*Quicquid sum Ego quamvis Infra  
Lucilli censum ingeniumq; ———*) my  
explications do in many things illustrate  
the text of my Author.

24 Martii,  
1654.

ANNO.



ANNOTATIONS  
UPON  
*RELIGIO MEDICI.*

---

*The Epistle to the Reader.*

Certainly that man were greedy of life, who should desire to live when all the world were at an end;] *This Mr. Merryweather hath rendred thus ; Cupidum esse vitæ oportet, qui universo jam expirante mundo vivere cuperet ; and well enough : but it is not amiss to remember, that we have this saying in Seneca the Tragœdian, who gives it us thus, Vitæ est avidus quilibet non vult mundo secum pereunte mori.*

*There*

There are many things delivered Rhetorically.] *The Author herein imitates the ingenuity of St. Austin, who, in his Retract, corrects himself for having delivered some things more like a young Rhetorician than a sound Divine: but though St. Aug. doth deservedly acknowledge it a fault in himself, in that he voluntarily published such things, yet cannot it be so in this Author, in that he intended no publication of it, as he professeth in this Epistle, and in that other to Sir Kenelm Digby.*

*The*



*The First P A R T.*

**T**He general scandal of my Pro-  
 fession.] Physicians ( of the  
 number whereof it appears by several  
 passages in this Book the Author  
 is one) do commonly hear ill in this  
 behalf. It is a common speech (but  
 onely amongst the unlearned sort)  
*Ubi tres Medici, duo Athei.* The rea-  
 sons why those of that profession  
 (I declare my self that I am none,  
 but *Causarum Actor mediocris*, to use  
*Horace* his phrase) may be thought to  
 deserve that censure, the Author  
 rendreth, *Sect. 19.*

*The natural course of my studies.]*  
 The vulgar lay not the imputati-  
 on of Atheism onely upon Physi-  
 tians, but upon Philosophers in  
 general, who for that they give  
 themselves to understand the ope-  
 rations of *Nature*, they calumniate  
 them, as though they rested in the  
 second causes without any respect



to the first. Hereupon it was, that in the tenth Age Pope *Silvester* the second pass'd for a Magician, because he understood Geometry and natural Philosophy. *Baron. Annal.* 990. And *Apuleius* long before him laboured of the same suspicion upon no better ground, he was accus'd, and made a learned Apology for himself, and in that hath laid down what the ground is of such accusations, in these words: *Hæc ferme communi quodam errore imperitorum Philosophis objectantur, ut partem eorum qui corporum causas meras & simplices rimantur, inreligiosos putant, eoque aiunt Deos abnuere, ut Anaxagoram, & Lucippum, & Democritum, & Epicurum, ceterosq; rerum nature Patronos.* *Apul. in Apolog.* And it is possible that those that look upon the second causes scattered, may rest in them and go no further, as my Lord *Bacon* in one of his *Essays* observeth; but our Author tells us there is a true Philosophy, from which no man becomes an Atheist. *Seet. 46.*

*The indifference of my behaviour  
and*

and Discourse in matters of Religion.]

Bigots are so overway'd by a preposterous zeal, that they hate all moderation in discourse of Religion; they are the men forsooth — *qui solos credant habendos esse Deos quos ipse colunt.* — *Erasmus* upon this account makes a great complaint to *Sir Tho. More* in an Epistle of his touching one *Dorpius* a Divine of *Lovain*, who because, upon occasion of discourse betwixt them, *Erasmus* would not promise him to write against *Luther*, told *Erasmus*, that he was a *Lutheran*, and afterwards published him for such; and yet as *Erasmus* was reputed no very good *Catholick*, so for certain he was no *Protestant*.

Not that I meerly owe this Title to the Font] as most do, taking up their Religion according to the way of their Ancestors; this is to be blamed amongst all Persons: It was practised as well amongst Heathens as Christians.

*Per caput hoc juro, per quod Pater antè solebat*, saith *Ascanius* in *Virgil*: and *Apuleius* notes it for an absurdity

dity. *Utrum Philosopho putas turpe scire ista, an nescire? negligere, an curare? nosse quanta sit etiam in istis providentia ratio, an de diis immortalibus Matri & Patri cedere? saith he in Apolog. and so doth Minutius: Unusquisq; vestrum non cogitat prius se debere deum nosse quam colere, dum inconsulte gestiuntur patentibus obedire, dum fieri malunt alieni erroris accessio, quam sibi credere. Minut. in Octav.*

*But having in my riper years examined &c.] according to the Apostolical Precept, Omnia probata, quod bonum est tenete.*

Sect. 2. *There being a Geography of Reli-*  
 Pag. 2. *gions] i. e. of Christian Religion, which you may see described in Mr. Brerewood's Enquiries: he means not of the Protestant Religion; for though there be a difference in Discipline, yet the Anglican, Scotie, Belgic, Gallican, and Helvetic Churches differ not in any essential matter of the Doctrine, as by the Harmony of Confessions appears. 5 Epist. Theod. Beze Edmundo Grindallo Ep. Londinens.*

*Wherein*

*Wherein I dislike nothing but the Name*] that is, *Lutheran, Calvinist, Zuinglian, &c.*

*Now the accidental occasion where- in, &c.*] This is graphically described by *Thuanus* in his History : but becaule his words are too large for this purpose, I shall give it you somewhat more briefly, according to the relation of the Author of the History of the Council of *Trent*. The occasion was the necessity of Pope *Leo Tenth*, who by his profusion had so exhausted the Treasure of the *Church*, that he was constrained to have recourse to the publishing of Indulgences to raise monies : some of which he had destined to his own Treasury, and other part to his Allyes, and particularly to his Sister he gave all the mony that should be raised in *Saxony* ; and she, that she might make the best profit of the donation, commits it to one *Aremboldus*, a Bishop, to appoint Treasurers for these Indulgences. Now the custom was, that whensoever these Indulgences were sent into *Saxony*, they were to be divulged

O 3

by

by the Fryars *Eremites* (of which Order *Luther* then was) but *Aremboldus* his agents thinking with themselves, that the Fryars *Eremites* were so well acquainted with the trade, that if the business should be left to them, they should neither be able to give so good an account of their Negotiation, nor yet get so much themselves by it as they might do in case the business were committed to another Order; they thereupon recommend it to (and the business is undertaken by) the *Dominican* Fryars, who performed it so ill, that the scandal arising both from thence, and from the ill lives of those that set them on work, stirred up *Luther* to write against the abuses of these Indulgences; which was all he did at first; but then, not long after, being provoked by some Sermons and small Discourses that had been published against what he had written, he rips up the *business* from the beginning, and publishes xcv *Theses* against it at *Wittenberg*. Against these, *Tekel* a *Dominican* writes; then *Luther* adds an explication to his.

*Eckius*

*Eckius* and *Prierius* Dominicans, thereupon take the controversie against him: and now *Luther* begins to be hot; and because his adversaries could not found the matter of Indulgences upon other foundations then the *Pope's* power and infallibility, that begets a disputation betwixt them concerning the *Pope's* power, which *Luther* insists upon as inferiour to that of a *general Council*; and so by degrees he came on to oppose the Popish Doctrine of *Remission of Sins, Penances, and Purgatory*; and by reason of *Cardinal Cajetans* imprudent management of the conference he had with him, it came to pass that he rejected the whole body of Popish Doctrine. So that by this we may see what was the accidental occasion, wherein the slender means whereby, and the abject condition of the person by whom, the work of Reformation of Religion was set on foot.

*Yet I have not shaken hands with* Sect. 3.  
*those desperate Resolutions, (Resol. Pag. 3.*  
*vers it should be, without doubt) who*  
*had rather venture at large their de-*



decayed Bottom, than bring her in to be new trimm'd in the Dock ; who had rather promiscuously retain all, than abridge any ; and obstinately be what they are, than what they have been, as to stand in diameter and at sword's points with them : we have reformed from them, not against them, &c. ] These words by Mr. Merryweather are thus rendred, *sc. Nec tamen in vecordem illum pertinacium hominum gregem memet adjungo, qui labefactatum navigium malunt fortuna committere quàm in navale de integro refarciendum deducere, qui malunt omnia promiscuè retinere quàm quicquam inde diminuire, & pertinaciter esse qui sunt quàm qui olim fuerunt, ita uti isdem ex diametro repugnent : ab illis, non contra illos, reformationem instituimus, &c.* And the Latine Annotator sits down very well satisfied with it, and hath bestowed some Notes upon it ; but under the favour both of him and the Translator, this Translation is so far different from the sense of the Author, that it hath no sense in it ; or if there be any construction of  
 sense

sense in it, it is quite besides the Author's meaning ; which will appear if we consider the context, by that we shall find that the Author in giving an account of his Religion, tells us first, that he is a Christian, and farther, that he is of the reform'd Religion ; but yet he saith, in this place, he is not so rigid a Protestant, nor at defiance with Papists so far, but that in many things he can comply with them, (the particulars he afterwards mentions in this Section) for, saith he, we have reform'd from them, not against them ; that is, as the *Archbishop of Canterbury* against the *Jesuit* discourseth well, We have made no new Religion nor Schism from the old ; but in calling for the old, and desiring that which was novel and crept in might be rejected, and the Church of *Rome* refusing it, we have reform'd from those upstart novel Doctrines, but against none of the old : and other sense the place cannot bear ; therefore how the *Latine Annotator* can apply it as though in this place the Author intended to note the *Anabaptists*

baptists, I see not, unless it were in respect of the expression, *Vecordem pertinacium hominum gregem*, which truly is a description well befitting them, though not intended to them in this place: howsoever, I see not any ground from hence to conclude the Author to be any whit inclining to the *Bulk* of Popery (but have great reason from many passages in this Book to believe the contrary,) as he that prefix'd a Preface to the Parisian Edition of this Book hath unwarrantably done.

But for the mistake of the Translator, it is very obvious from whence that arose. I doubt not but it was from the mistake of the sense of the English Phrase, *Shaken hands*, which he hath rendred by these words, *Mentis adjungo*, wherein he hath too much play'd the Scholar, and shew'd himself to be more skilful in forraign and aneient customs, then in the vernacular practise and usage of the language of his own Country; for although amongst the Latines profection of the Hand were a Symbole and sign of Peace and Concord,

(as

(as *Alex. ab Alexandro*; *Manum vero protendere, pacem peti significabant*, (saith he) *Gen. Dier. lib. 4. cap. ult.* which also is confirmed by *Cicero pro Dejotaro*; and *Cesar, l. 2. de Bellico Gallico*) and was used in their first meetings, as appears by the Phrase, *Jungerè hospitio Dextras*; and by that of *Virgil*,

*Oremus pacem, & Dextras tendamus inermes.*

And many like passages that occur in the Poets, to which I believe the Translator had respect: yet in modern practise, especially with us in *England*, that ceremony is used as much in our *Adieu's* as in the first *Congresse*; and so the Author meant in this place, by saying he had not shaken hands; that is, that he had not so deserted, or bid farewell to the *Romanists*, as to stand at swords point with them: and then he gives his reasons at those words, *For omitting those impropriations, &c.* So that instead of *memet adjungo*, the Translator should have used some word

word or Phrase of a clean contrary signification, and instead of *ex diametro repugnant*, it should be *repugnantem*.

Sect. 5. Henry the Eighth, though he re-  
 Pag. 8. jected the Pope, refused not the  
 faith of *Rome*.] So much *Buchanan*  
 in his own life written by himself  
 testifieth, who speaking of his com-  
 ing into *England* about the latter end  
 of that King's time, saith, *Sed ibi tum*  
*omnia adeo erant incerta, ut eodem*  
*die, ac eodem igne* (very strange!)  
*utriusque factionis homines cremaren-*  
*tur* *Henrico 8. jam seniore sua magnis*  
*fecuritati quam Religionis puritati in-*  
*tento.* And for confirmation of this  
 assertion of the Author, *vide Stat.*  
*31 H. 8. cap. 14.*

And was conceived the State of *Ve-*  
*nice* would have attempted in our  
*days.*] This expectation was in the  
 time of Pope *Paul* the Fifth, who by  
 excommunicating that Republique,  
 gave occasion to the Senate to ba-  
 nish all such of the Clergy as would  
 not by reason of the Popes command  
 administer the Sacraments, and upon  
 that account the *Jesuites* were cast  
 out,

out, and never since receiv'd into that State.

Or be angry with his judgement for Sect. 6. not agreeing with me in that, from Pag. 9. which perhaps within a few dayes I should dissent my self.] I cannot think but in this expression the Author had respect to that of that excellent French Writer, *Monsieur Mountaign* (in whom I often trace him.) *Combien diversement jugeons nous de choses? Combien de fois changeons nous nos fantasies? Ce que je tien aujourd'hui, ce que je croy, je le tien & le croy de toute ma Creance, mais ne m'est il pas advenu non une fois mais cent, mais mille & tous les jours d'avoir embrasse quelque autre chose?* Mountaign. liv. 2. *Des Essais*. Chap. 12.

Every man is not a proper Champion for truth, &c. A good cause is never betray'd more then when it is prosecuted with much eagerness, and but little sufficiency, and therefore *Zuinglius*, though he were of *Carolistadins* his opinion in the point of the Sacrament of the *Eucharist* against *Luther*, yet he blamed him  
for



for undertaking the defence of that cause against *Luther*, not judging him able enough for the encounter: *Non satis habet humerorum*, saith he of *Carlostad*, alluding to that of *Horace*, *Sumite materiam vestris qui scribitis aquam Viribus, & versate diu quid ferre recusent Quid valeant humeri.*— So *Minutius Felix*; *Plerumq; pro differentium viribus, & eloquentia potestate, etiam perspicua veritatis conditio mutetur.* *Minut. in Octav.* And *Lactantius* saith, this truth is verified in *Minutius* himself: for *Him*, *Tertullian* and *Cyprian*, he spares not to blame (all of them) as if they had not with dexterity enough defended the Christian Cause against the *Ethniques*. *Lactant. de justitia, cap. 1.* I could wish that those that succeeded him had not as much cause of complaint against him: surely he is noted to have had many errors *contra fidem*.

In *Philosophy* — there is no man more Paradoxical than my self, but in Divinity I love to keep the Road, &c.] Appositely to the mind of the Author, saith the Publisher of Mr. *Pembel's*

*Pembel's Book de origine formarum,*  
*Certe (saith he) in locis Theologicis*  
*ne quid detrimenti capiat vel Pax, vel*  
*Veritas Christi — à novarum o-*  
*pinionum pruritu prorsus abstinendum*  
*puto usq; adeo ut ad certum regulam*  
*etiam loqui debeamus, quod pie & pru-*  
*denter monet Augustinus (de Civ.*  
*Dei, l. 16. cap. 23.) [ne verborum li-*  
*centia impia vi gignat opinionem,] at in*  
*pulvere Scholastico ubi in nullius ver-*  
*ba juramus, & in utramvis partem*  
*sine dispendio vel pacis, vel salutis ire*  
*liceat, major conceditur cum sentiendi*  
*tum loquendi libertas, &c. Capet. in*  
*Ep. Dedicat. Pembel. de origine form.*  
*præsit.*

Heresies perish not with their Au-  
 thors, but like the River *Arethusa*,  
 though they lose their currents in  
 one place, they rise again in ano-  
 ther.] Who would not think that  
 this expression were taken from Mr.  
*Mountaigne, l. 2. des Ess. cap. 12.*  
 Where he hath these words, *Nature*  
*enferme dans les termes de son progrès*  
*ordinaire comme toutes autres choses*  
*aussi les creances les jugements & opi-*  
*nions des hommes elles ont leur re-*  
*volutions;*

volutions ; and that Mountaigne took his from Tully. *Non enim hominum interitu sententia quoque occidunt. Tull. de nat. deorum. l. 1.*  
 Sect. Of the River *Arethusa* thus *Seneca. Videbis celebratissimum carminibus fontem Arethusam limpidissimi ac perlucidissimi ad imum stagni gelidissimas aquas profundentem, sive illas primum nascentes invenit, sive flumen integrum subter tot maria, & à confusione peioris unda servatum reddidit. Senec. de consolat. ad Martiam.*

Sect. 7.

Pag. 12.

Now the first of mine was that of the Arabians.] For this Heresie, the Author here sheweth what it was, they are called *Arabians* from the place where it was fostered, and because the *Heresiarch* was not known, *Euseb. St. Aug. and Nicephorus* do all write of it : the reason of this Heresie was so specious, that it drew Pope *John 22* to be of the same perswasion. Where then was his infallibility? Why, *Bellarmino* tells you he was nevertheless infallible for that : for, saith he, he maintained this opinion when he might do it without peril of  
 of

of Heresie, for that no definition of the Church whereby 'twas made Heresie, had preceded when he held that opinion. *Bellar. l. 4. de Pontif. Roman. cap. 4.* Now this definition was first made ('tis true) by *Pope Benedict* in the 14 Age: but then I would ask another question, that is, If 'till that time there were nothing defined in the Church touching the beatitude of Saints, what certainty was there touching the sanctity of any man? and upon what ground were those Canonizations of Saints had, that were before the 14 Age?

*The second was that of Origen.] Besides St. Augustine, Epiphanius, and also S. Hierom do relate that Origen held, that not onely the souls of men, but the Devils themselves should be discharged from torture after a certain time: but Genebrard endeavours to clear him of this. Vid. Coquæum, in 21 lib. Aug. de Civ. Dei, c. 17.*

*These opinions, though condemned by lawful Councils, were not Heresie in me, &c.] For to make an Heretique, there must be not only Error*

in intellectu, but pertinacia in voluntate. So St. Aug. *Qui sententiam suam quamvis falsam atque perversam nulla pertinaci animositate defendunt, querunt autem cauta solitudine veritatem, corrigi parati cum invenerint, nequaquam sunt inter Hæreticos deputandi.* Aug. cont. Manich. 24. qu. 3.

Se&t. 9. The deepest mysteries that ours contains, have not only been illustrated, but maintained by Syllogism and the Rule of Reason.] and since this Book was written, by Mr. White in his *Institutiones Sacrae.*

Pag. 16.

And when they have seen the Red Sea, doubt not of the Miracle.] Those that have seen it, have been better informed than Sir Henry Blount was; for he tells us, That he desired to view the passage of Moses into the Red Sea (not being above three days journey off,) but the Jews told him the precise place was not known within less than the space of a days journey along the shore; wherefore (saith he) I left that as too uncertain for any Observation. *In his Voyage into the Levant.*

I had as lieve you tell me, that *A. Sect. 10. nima est Angelus hominis, est corpus Dei, as Entelechia; Lux est umbra Dei, as actus perspicui.*] Great variety of opinion there hath been amongst the Ancient Philosophers touching the definition of the Soul. *Thales*, his was, that it is a *Nature without Repose.* *Asclepiades*, that it is an *Exercitation of Sense.* *Empedocles*, that it is a *thing composed of Earth and Water*; *Parmenides*, held it of *Earth and Fire*; *Galen*, that it is *Heat*; *Hippocrates*, that it is a *spirit diffused through the body.* Some others have held it to be *Light*; *Plato* saith, 'tis a *Substance moving it self*; and after him cometh *Aristotle* (whom the Author here reproveth) and goeth a degree farther, and saith it is *Entelechia*, that is, that which naturally makes the body to move. But this definition is as rigid as any of the other; for this tells us not what the *essence, origine* or *nature* of the *soul* is, but only marks an *effect* of it, and therefore signifieth no more than if he had said (as the Author's Phrase is) that it is *An-*



*gelus hominis*, or an *Intelligence* that moveth man, as he supposed those other to do the Heavens.

Now to come to the definition of Light, in which the Author is also unsatisfied with the School of *Aristotle*, he saith, It satisfieth him no more to tell him that *Lux est actus perspicui*, than if you should tell him that it is *umbra Dei*. The ground of this definition given by the *Peripateticks*, is taken from a passage in *Aristot. de anima*, l. 2. cap. 7. where *Aristotle* saith, That the colour of the thing seen doth move that which is *perspicuum actu* (i.e. *illustratam naturam qua sit in aere aliòve corpore transparente*) and that that, in regard of its continuation to the eye, moveth the eye, and by its help the internal *sensorium*; and that so vision is perform'd. Now as it is true that the Sectators of *Aristotle* are too blame, by fastening upon him by occasion of this passage, that he meant that those things that made this impress upon the Organs are meer accidents, and have nothing of substance; which is more than ever

ever he meant, and cannot be maintained without violence to Reason and his own Principles; so for *Aristotle* himself, no man is beholding to him for any Science acquir'd by this definition: for what is any man the near for his telling him that Colour (admitting it to be a body, as indeed it is, and in that place he doth not deny) doth move *actu perspicuum*, when as the perspicuity is in relation to the eye; and he doth not say how it comes to be perspicuous, which is the thing enquired after, but gives it that denomination before the eye hath perform'd its office; so that if he had said it had been *umbra Dei*, it would have been as intelligible, as what he hath said. He that would be satisfied how Vision is perform'd, let him see Mr. *Hobbs* in *Tract. de nat. human. cap. 2.*

[For God had not caused it to rain upon the Earth.] *St. Aug. de Genes. ad literam cap. 5. 6.* salves that expression from any inconvenience; but the Author in *Pseudodox. Epidemic. l. 7. cap. 1.* shews that we have no reason to be confident that this fruit was an *Apple*. I

I believe that the Serpent (if we shall literally understand it) from his proper form and figure made his motion on his belly before the curse.] Yet the Author himself sheweth in *Pseudodox. Epidem. lib. 7. cap. 1.* that the form or kind of this Serpent is not agreed on: yet *Comestor* affirm'd it was a Dragon, *Eugubinus* a Basilisk, *Delrio* a Viper, and others a common Snake: but of what kind soever it was, he sheweth in the same Volume, *lib. 5. c. 4.* that there was no inconvenience, that the Temptation should be perform'd in his proper shape.

I find the tryal of the Pucelage and virginity of Women, which God ordained the Jews, is very fallible.] *Locus extat. Deut. c. 22.* the same is affirm'd by *Laurentius* in his *Anatom.*

Whole Nations have escaped the curse of Child-birth, which God seemsto pronounce upon the whole sex.] This is attested by Mr. *Montaigne*, *Les douleurs de l'enfantiment par les medecines, & par dein mesme estimees grandes, & qua nous pasons avec tant de Ceremonies, il y a des nations*

nations entieres qui ne'n fuit nul conte.

l. i. des Ess. c. 14.

Who can speak of Eternity without Sect. II.

a Solæcism, or think thereof without Pag. 21.

an Extasie? Time we may compre-

bend, &c.] Touching the difference

betwixt *Eternity* and *Time*, there

have been great disputes amongst

Philosophers; some affirming it to

be no more than *duration perpetual*

*consisting of parts*; and others (to

which opinion, it appears by what

follows in this Section, the Author

adheres) affirmed (to use the Au-

thor's phrase) that it hath no distin-

ction of Tenses, but is according to

*Boetius* (lib. 5. consol. prof. 6.) his

definition, *interminabilis vite tota*

*simul & perfecta possessio*. For me,

*Non nostrum est tantas componere lites*.

I shall only observe what each of

them hath to say against the other.

Say those of the first opinion against

those that follow *Boetius* his defini-

tion, That definition was taken by

*Boetius* out of *Plato's Timæus*, and is

otherwise applyed, though not by

*Boetius*, yet by those that follow

him, than ever *Plato* intended it; for

he did not take it in the Abstract, but in the Concrete, for an *eternal thing*, a *Divine substance*, by which he meant *God*, or his *Anima mundi*; and this he did, to the intent to establish this truth, That no mutation can befall the Divine Majesty, as it doth to things subject to generation and corruption; and that *Plato* there intended not to define or describe any *species* of duration: and they say that it is impossible to understand any such *species* of duration that is (according to the Author's expression) but one *permanent point*.

Now that which those that follow *Boetius*, urge against the other definition is, they say it doth not at all difference *Eternity* from the nature of *Time*; for they say if it be composed of many *Nunc's*, or many instants, by the addition of one more, it is still increased; and by that means *Infinity* or *Eternity* is not included, nor ought more than *Time*. For this, see Mr. *White*, de dial. mundo, Dial. 3. Nod. 4.

[*Indeed he only is &c.*] This the Author infers from the words of God to *Moses*, *I am that I am*; and this

this to distinguish him from all others, who (he saith) have and shall be: but those that are learned in the *Hebrew*, do affirm that the words in that place (*Exod. 3.*) do not signifie, *Ego sum qui sum, & qui est, &c.* but *Ero qui ero, & qui erit, &c.* vid. *Gassend. in animad. Epicur. Physiolog.*

I wonder how Aristotle could conceive the *World Eternal*, or how he could make two *Eternities*: ] (that is, that God and the World both, were eternal.) I wonder more at either the ignorance or incogitancy of the *Conimbricenses*, who in their Comment upon the eighth Book of *Aristotle's Physicks* treating of the matter of Creation, when they had first said that it was possible to know it, and that actually it was known, (for *Aristotle* knew it) yet for all this they afterwards affirm, That considering onely the light of Nature, there is nothing can be brought to demonstrate Creation: and yet farther, when they had defined Creation to be the production of a thing *ex nihilo*, and had proved that the world was



was so created in time, and refused the arguments of the Philosophers to the contrary; they added this, That the world might be created *ab aeterno*: for having propos'd this question [*Num aliquid a Deo ex Aeternitate procreari potuit?*] they defend the affirmative, and assert, That not onely incorporeal substances, as Angels; or permanent, as the celestial Bodies, or corruptible, as Men, &c. might be produced and made *ab aeterno*, and be conserved by an infinite time, *ex utraq; parte*; and that this is neither repugnant to God the Creator, the things created, nor to the nature of Creation: for proof whereof, they bring instances of the *Sun*, which if it had been eternal, had illuminated eternally, (and the virtue of God is not less than the virtue of the Sun.) Another instance they bring of the *divine Word*, which was produc'd *ab aeterno*: in which discourse, and in the instances brought to maintain it, it is hard to say whether the madness or impiety be greater; and certainly if Christians thus argue, we have the more reason

reason to pardon the poor Heathen  
*Aristotle.*

*There is not three but a Trinity of Souls.*] The *Peripatetiques* held that men had three distinct Souls; whom the Hereticks, the *Anomai*, and the *Jacobites*, followed. There arose a great dispute about this matter in *Oxford*, in the year 1276; and it was then determined against *Aristotle*. *Daneus Christ. Eth. l. 1. c. 4.* and *Suarez* in his *Treatise de causa formali*, *Quest. An dentur plures forme in uno composito*, affirmeth there was a Synod that did anathematize all that held with *Aristotle* in this point.

*There is but one first, and four se-* Sect. 14.  
*cond Causes in all things.*] Pag. 28. In that he saith there is but one first cause, he speaketh in opposition to the *Manichees*, who held there were *Duo principia*; one from whom came all good, and the other from whom came all evil: the reason of *Protagoras* did it seems impose upon their understandings; he was wont to say, *Si Deus non est, unde igitur bona? Si autem est, unde mala?* In  
that

that he saith there are but four second causes, he opposeth *Plato*, who to the four causes, *material*, *efficient*, *formal*, and *final*, adds for a fifth *exemplar* or *Idea*, sc. *Id ad quod respiciens artifex, id quod destinabat, efficit*; according to whose mind *Boetius* speaks, *lib. 3. mot. 9. de cons. Philosoph.*

*O qui perpetua mundum ratione gubernas,  
Terrarum Cæliq; sator, qui tempus ad ævo  
Ire jubes stabilisque manens das cuncta moveri :  
Quem non externæ pepulerunt fingere cause  
Materiæ fluitantis opus, verum insita summi  
Forma boni livore carens : tu cuncta superno  
Ducis ab exemplo, pulchrum pulcherrimus ipse  
Mundum mente gerens, similique in imagine  
formans  
Perfectasq; jubens perfectum absolvere partes.*

And *St. Augustine*, *l. 83. quest. 46.* where (amongst other) he hath these words, *Restat ergo ut omnia Ratione sint condita, nec eadem ratione homo qua equus; hoc enim absurdum est existimare : singula autem propriis sunt creata rationibus.* But these *idea* *Plato's* Scholar *Aristotle* would not allow to make or constitute a different

different sort of cause from the *formal* or *efficient* ; to which purpose he disputes *l. 7. Metaphysic.* but he and his Sectators, and the *Romists* also, agree (as the Author) that there are but the four remembred causes : so that the Author in affirming there are but four, hath no adversary but the *Platonists* ; but yet in asserting there are four (as his words imploy) there are that oppose him, and the *Schools of Aristot.* and *Ramus.* I shall bring for instance Mr. *Nat. Carpenter*, who in his *Philosophia libera* affirmeth, there is no such cause as that which they call the *Final cause* : he argueth thus ; Every cause hath an influence upon its effect, but so has not the End, therefore it is not a Cause. The *major* Proposition (he saith) is evident, because the influence of a cause upon its effect, is either the causality it self, or something that is necessarily conjoynd to it : and the *minor* as plain ; for either the End hath an influence upon the Effect immediately, or mediately, by stirring up the Efficient to operate ; not immediately

diately, because so it should enter either the *constitution*, or *production*, or *conservation* of the things; but the constitution it cannot enter, because the constitution is onely of *matter* and *form*; nor the Production, for so it should concur to the production, either as it is *simply the end*, or as an *exciter of the Efficient*; but not simply as the end, because the end *as end* doth not go before, but followeth the thing produced, and therefore doth not concur to its production: if they say it doth so far concur, as it is desired of the agent or efficient cause, it should not so have an immediate influence upon the effect, but should onely first move the efficient. Lastly, saith he, it doth not enter the conservation of a thing, because a thing is often conserved, when it is frustrate of its due end, as when its converted to a new use and end. Divers other arguments he hath to prove there is no such cause as the final cause, *Nat. Carpenter Philosoph. liber. Decad. 3. Exercitat. 5.* But for all this, the Author and he differ not in substance

stance : for 'tis not the Author's intention to assert that the end is in nature præexistent to the effect, but only that whatsoever God has made, he hath made to some end or other ; which he doth to oppose the Sectors of *Epicurus*, who maintain the contrary, as is to be seen by this of *Lucretius* which follows.

*Ilud in his rebus vitium vebementer & istum  
Effugere errorum, vitareque præmeditabor,  
Lumina ne facias oculorum clara creata  
Prospicere ut possimus : & ut proferre viritum  
Proceros passus, ideo fastigia posse  
Surarum ac feminum pedibus fundata plicari :  
Brachia tum porro validis ex apta laceris  
Esse, manusq; datas utraq; ex parte ministras.  
Ut facere ad vitam possimus, quæ foret usus :  
Cetera de genere hoc, inter quæ unq; precantur  
Omnia perversa præpostera sunt ratione :  
Nil ideo quoniam natum est, in corpore ut uti  
Possemus ; sed quod natum est, id procreat usum,  
Nec fuit ante videre oculorum lumina nata,  
Nec dictis orare prius, quam lingua creata est,  
Sed potius longè linguæ præcessit origo  
Sermonem ; multoq; creatæ sunt prius aures  
Quàm sonus est auditus, & omnia deniq; membra  
Antè fuere, ut opinor, eorum, quàm foret usus :  
Haud igitur potuere utendi crescere causa.*

*Lucret. lib. 4.*

*There*



Sect. 15. There are no Grotesques in nature,  
 Pag. 29. &c.] So Monfr. Montaign. Il n'y a  
 rien d'mutil en nature, non pas l'in-  
 utilité mesmes, Rien ne s'est jugere  
 en cet Univers que n'y tiennne place  
 opportun. Ess. 1.3. c.1.

Who admires not Regiomontanus  
 his Fly beyond his Eagle? ] Of these  
 Du Bartas.

Que diray je del' aigle,  
 D'ont un doct Alcman bonore nostre siecle  
 Aigle qui distoieant de la maistresse main,  
 Aila loin au devant d'un Empereur Germain,  
 Et l'ayant recontre, soudain d'une aisle accorie,  
 Se tournant le suit au sueil de la porte  
 Du fort Noremburgois, que lis piliers dorez,  
 Les tapissez chemins, les ares elabourez,  
 Les foirdroyans Canons, in la jeusnesse isnelle,  
 In le chena Senat, n'honorroit tant come elle.  
 Un jour, que cetominer plus des esbats, que de  
 mets,  
 En prive, festoyoit ses segnieurs plus amees,  
 Une mousche de fer, dans sa main recolee,  
 Prit sans ayde d'autroy, sa gallard evolee:  
 Fit une entiere Ronde, & puis d'un cerveau las  
 Come ayant jugement, se purcha sur son bras.

Thus Englished by Sylvester.

Why should I not that wooden Eagle mention?  
 (A learned German's late admir'd invention  
 which

## Religio Medici.

215

Which mounting from his fist that framed her,  
Flew far to meet an Almain Emperour :  
And having met him with her nimble Train,  
And weary wings turning about again,  
Followed him close unto the Castle Gate  
Of Noremberg, whom all the streets of state,  
Streets hang'd with Arras, arches curious built,  
Loud thundering Canons, Columns richly guilt,  
Gray-headed Senate, and Youth's gallantise,  
Grac'd not so much as onely this device.  
Once as this Artist more with mirth than meat,  
Feasted some friends that he esteemed great,  
From under's hand an Iron Fly flew out,  
Which having flown a perfect round about,  
With weary wings return'd unto her Master,  
And as (judicious) on his arm she plac'd her.

Or wonder not more at the operation  
of two souls in those little bodies, than  
but one in the Trunk of a Cedar? ]  
That is, the vegetative, which, ac-  
cording to the common opinion,  
is supposed to be in Trees, though  
the Epicures and Stoiques would  
not allow any Soul in Plants;  
but Empedocles and Plato allowed  
them not onely a vegetative Soul,  
but affirm'd them to be Animals.  
The Manichees went farther, and  
attributed so much of the ratio-  
nal soul to them, that they accounted

it *Homicide* to gather either their flower or fruit, as *St. Aug.* reports.

*We carry with us the wonders we seek without us.* ] So *St. Aug.* l. 10. de civ. c. 3. *Omni miraculo quod fit per hominem majus miraculum est homo.*

Sect. 14.

Pag. 31.

*Another of his servants Nature that publique and universal Manuscript, that lies expanded, &c.* ] So is the description of *Du Bartas* 7. jour de la sepm.

*Oyes ce Docteur muet est adie en ce livre  
Qui muet & jour ouvert s' apprendra de bien  
[vivre.*

*All things are artificial, for Nature is the Art of God.* ] So *Mr. Hobbs* in his *Leviathan* (in initio) Nature is the Art whereby God governs the World.

Sect. 17.

Pag. 34.

*Directing the operations of single and individual Essences, &c.* ] Things singular, or individuals, are in the opinion of Philosophers not to be known but by the way of sense, or by that which knows by its Essence, and that is onely God. The Devils have no such knowledge, because whatsoever knows so, is either  
the

the cause or effect of the thing known; thereupon *Averroes* concluded that God was the cause of all things, because he understands all things by his Essence; and *Albertus Magnus* concluded, That the inferiour Intelligence understands the superiour, because it is an effect of the superiour. but neither of these can be said of the Devil; for it appears he is not the effect of any of these inferiour things, much less is he the cause, for the power of Creation onely belongs to God.

All cannot be happy at once, because the Glory of one State depends upon the ruine of another. This Theme is ingeniously handled by Mr. Montaigne *liv. 1. des Ess. cap. 22.* the Title whereof is, *Le profit de l'un est dommage de l'autre.*

For the common fate of men of singular gifts of Mind, to be destitute of those of Fortune. So *Petron. Arbitr. Amor ingenii hominem unquam divitem fecit*, in *Satyr.* And *Apuleius* in *Apolog.* *Idem mihi etiam, (saith he) paupertatem opprobavit acceptum Philosopho crimen & ultero*

*proficendum*; and then a little afterwards, he sheweth that it was the common fate of those that had singular gifts of mind: *Eadem enim est paupertas apud Græcos in Aristide iusta, in Phocione benigna, in Epaminonde strenua, in Socrate sapiens, in Homero diserta.*

*We need not labour with so many arguments to confute Judicial Astrology.* There is nothing in judicial *Astrology* that may render it impious; but the exception against it is, That it is vain and fallible, of which any man will be convinced, that has read *Tully de Divinat.* and *St. Aug. 5 book de Civ. Dei.*

Sect. 19. *There is in our Soul a kind of*  
 Pag. 41. *Triumvirate* — that distracts the peace of our Commonwealth; not less than did that other the State of Rome.] There were two *Triumvirates*, by which the peace of Rome was distracted; that of *Crassus, Caesar, and Pompey*, of which *Lucan, l. 1.*

— *Tu causam aliorum* —  
*Facta tribus Dominis communis Roma, nec unquam*  
*In turbam nisi feralia fœdera Regni.*

and



and that other of *Augustus, Antonius,* and *Lepidus*, by whom saith *Florus*, *Respublica convulsa est laceratâque*, which comes somewhat near the Author's words, and therefore I take it that he means this last Triumvirate.

*Would dissuade my belief from the miracle of the brazen Serpent.*] Vid. *Coqueum* in l. 10. *Aug. de Civ. Dei*, c. 8.

*And bid me mistrust a miracle in Elias, &c.*] The history is 18. 1 *Reg.* it should be *Elijah*. The Author in 15. cap. 7. *lib. Pseudodox.* sheweth it was not perform'd naturally; he was (as he saith) a perfect miracle.

*To think the combustion of Sodom might be natural,*] Of that opinion was *Strabo*, whereupon he is reprehended by *Genebrard* in these words: *Strabo falsus est — dum everisionem addicit sulphuri & bitumini è terra erumpentibus, quæ erat assignanda Cælo, i.e. Deo irato.* *Tacitus* reports it according to the Bible, *fulminis ictu arsisse.*

*Those that held Religion was the* Sect. 20.  
*difference of Man from Beasts, &c.*] Pag. 44.  
*Lactantius* was one of those: *Religioni ergo serviendum est, quam qui*



*non suscipit, ipse se prosternit in terram & vitam pecudum secutus humanitate se abdicat. Lactant. de fals. Sapiaentia, cap. 10.*

*The Doctrine of Epicurus that denied the Providence of God, was no Atheism, but &c.]* I doubt not but he means that delivered in his Epistle to *Menecæus*, and recorded by *Diogenes Laertius*, lib. 10. *Quod beatum aeternumq; est, id nec habet ipsum negotii quicquam, nec exhibet alteri, itaque neque ira, neque gratia tenetur, quod quæ talia sunt imbecillia sunt omnia;* which the *Epicurean* Poet hath delivered almost in the same words.

*Omnis enim per se divum natura necessest  
Immortali ævo summa cum pace fruatur,  
Semota à nostris rebus sejunctaq; longè:  
Nam privata dolore omni, privata periculis  
Ipsa suis pellens opibus nihil indiga nostri  
Nec bene pro meritis capitur; nec tangitur ira.*

*Lucret. lib. 2.*

*\* That Villain and Secretary of Hell, that composed that miscreant piece of the three Impostors.]* It was *Ochinus* that composed this piece; but

but there was no less a man than the Emperour *Frederick* the Second, that was as lavish of his Tongue, as the other of his Pen; *Cui saepe in ore, Tres fuisse insignes impostores, qui genus humanum seduxerant, Moysen, Christum, Mahum-tem. Lips. monit. & exempl. Politic. cap. 4.* And a greater than he, Pope *Leo* the Tenth, was as little favourable to our Saviour, when he us'd that Speech which is reported of him, *Quantas nobis divitias comparavit ista de Christo fabula!*

*There are in Scriptures stories that* Sect. 21.  
*do exceed the Fables of Poets.]* So Pag. 46.  
the Author of *Relig. Laici.* *Certe mira admodum in S. S. plura quam in reliquis omnibus Historiis traduntur;* (and then he concludes with the Author) *sed quae non retundunt intellectum, sed exercent.*

*Yet raise no question who shall rise with that rib at the Resurrection.]* The Author cap. 2 l. 7. *Pseudodox.* sheweth that it appears in Anatomy, that the ribs of Man and Woman are equal.

*Whether the World were created in*

*Autumn, Summer, or the Spring, &c.]*  
 In this matter there is a consent be-  
 twixt two learned Poets, *Lucretius*  
 and *Virgil*, that it begins in *Spring*,

*At novitas mundi nec frigora dura ciebat ,  
 Nec nimios aestus, nec magnis viribus auras.*

*Lucretius,*

Which he would have to be under-  
 stood of *Autumn*, because that re-  
 sembles old age rather than Infancy,  
 He speaks expressly of the Fowls.

*Principio genus alituum variaq; volucres  
 Ova relinquebant exclusæ tempore verno.*

*Lucret,*

Then for *Virgil*.

*Non alios prima nascentis origine mundi  
 Illuxisse dies aliumve habuisse tenorem  
 Crediderim, ver illud erat, ver magnus agebat  
 Orbis, & hibernis parcebant flatibus Euri.*

*Virgil 2. Georgic.*

But there is great difference about  
 it betwixt Church-Doctors, some a-  
 greeing with these Poets, and others  
 affirming the time to be *Autumn* :  
 but truly, in strict speaking, it was  
 not created in any one, but all of the  
 seasons

seasons, as the Author saith here, and hath shewed at large, *Pseudodox. Epidemic. lib. 6. cap. 2.*

*'Tis ridiculoua to put off or drown the general flood of Noah in that particular inundation of Deucalion,]* Sect. 22. Pag. 49.  
as the Heathen some of them sometimes did: *Confuderunt igitur saepe ethnici particularia illa diluvia, quae longè post secuta sunt, cum illos universali quod praecessit, ut ex fabulis in Diluvio Deucalionaeo sparsis colligere licet; non tamen semper nec ubique. Author. Observat. in Mytholog. Nat. Com.* Then amongst those that confound them, he reckons *Ovid* and *Plutarch*.

*How all the kinds of Creatures, not onely in their own bulks, but with a competency of food and sustenance, might be preserved in one Ark, and within the extent of 300 Cubits, to a reason that rightly examines - it will appear very feasible.]* Yet *Apelles*, the Disciple of *Mercion*, took upon him to deride the History of *Moses* in this particular, alledging that it must needs be a fable, for that it was impossible so many creatures should be

be contain'd in so small a space. *Origen* and *St. Aug.* to answer this pretended difficulty, alleadge, that *Moses* in this place speaks of Geometrical (and not vulgar) cubits, of which every one was as much as six vulgar ones, and so no difficulty. But *Perer. l. 10. com. in Genes. quest. 5. de arca*, rejects this opinion of *Origen*, as being both against reason and Scripture: 1. Because that sort of Cubit was never in use amongst any people, and therefore absurd to think *Moses* should intend it in this place. 2. If *Moses* should not speak of the same Cubits here, that he mentions in other places, there would be great æquivocation in Scripture: now in another place, *i. e. Exod. 27.* he saith God commanded him to make an *Altar* three Cubits high; which if it should be intended of Geometrical Cubits, it will contain 18 vulgar Cubits; which would not only render it useles, but would be contrary to the command which he saith God gave him, *Exod. 20. Thou shalt not go up by steps to my Altar.* For without steps what man could

could reach it? it must therefore be meant of ordinary Cubits; but that being so it was very feasible. I can more easily believe than understand it.

*And put the honest Father to the Refuge of a Miracle.]* This honest Father was St. Aug. who delivers his opinion, that it might be miraculously done, *lib. 16. de Civ. Dei, cap. 7.* where having propos'd the question how it might be done, he answers, *Quod si homines eas captas secum adduxerunt, & eo modo ubi habitabant earum, genera instituerunt, venandi studio fieri potuisse incredibile non est, quam jussu Dei sive permissu etiam opera Angelorum negandum non sit potuisse transferri;* but St. Aug. saith not, that it could not be done without a miracle.

*And 1500 years to people the World, as full a time, &c.]*

*That Methusalem was the longest liv'd of all the children of Adam, &c.]* See both these points cleared by the Author, in *Pseudodox. Epidemic.* the first, *lib. 6. cap. 6.* the other, *l. 7. cap. 3.*

*That*



That Judas perished by hanging himself, there is no certainty in Scripture, though in one place it seems to affirm it, and by a doubtful word hath given occasion to translate it; yet in another place, in a more punctual description it makes it improbable, and seems to overthrow it.] These two places that seem to contradict one another, are *Matthew* 27. 5. and *Acts* 1. 8. The doubtful word he speaks of is in the place of *Matthew*; it is ἀπύξατο, which signifieth suffocation as well as hanging (ἀπειθὼν ἀπύξατο, which may signifie literally, after he went out he was choak'd) but *Erasmus* translates it, *abiens laqueo se suspendit*: the words in the *Acts* are, *When he had thrown down himself headlong, he burst in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out*; which seems to differ much from the expression of *Matthew*; yet the ancient Writers, and Fathers of the Church do unanimously agree that he was hanged; some I shall cite. *Anastaf. Sinaita. l. 7. Auagog. Contempl. Unus latro ingratus cum esset typus Diaboli, et Serpentis, et Jude qui*

Qui se in ligno suffocavit. Gaudenti-  
us Brixienf. tract. 13. de natal.  
Dom. Mortem debitam laqueo sibimet  
intulit praparato, &c. Drogottosben.  
de sacram. dominic. pass. Jamdiu e-  
rat quidem quibz Christo recesserat, et  
avaritia laqueo se suspenderat, sed  
quod fecerat in occulto, palam omni-  
bus innotuit. S. Martialis in Ep. ad  
Tholosanos. Non sustinuit pœnitenti-  
am, donec laqueo mortis seipsum  
consumpsit. Ignat. ad Philippens.  
Diabolus laqueum ei ostendit, &  
suspendium docuit. Leo. Serm. 3. de  
passion. — ut quia facimus omnem  
mensuram ultionis excesserat, te ha-  
beret impietas tua judicem, te pate-  
retur sua pœna Carnificem. Theodo-  
ret. lib. 1. heretic. fabul. Ille proti-  
nus strangalatus est, qua fuit merces  
ejus proditoris. Chrysostom. Hom. 3.  
de proditore. Pependit Cælum Ter-  
ramque intermedius vago funere suf-  
focatus, & cum flagitio suo tumefacta,  
viscera crepuerunt, &c. Bernard.  
serm. 8. in Psalm. 9. Judas in aere  
crepuit medius.

There are those that are so parti-  
cular that they acquaint us with the  
manner

manner, as that it was done with a Cord. *Antiochus Laurensi*. Spem omnem à se cum abjecisset insitiente in eum inimico (sc. Diabolo) funiculo sibi præfocavit gulam. *Oecumen. in Act. fracto funiculo quo erat suffocatus decidit in terram precipitio.*  
 2. That it was done on a Fig-tree, *Beda*. Portam David egredientibus fons occurrit in Austrum per vallem directus, ad cujus medietatem ab occasu Judas se suspendisse narratur. Nam & ficus magna ibi & vetustissima stat.

*Juvenc. l. 4. Hist. Evangelii.*

*Exorsusq; suas laqueo sibi sumere penas,  
 Informem rapuit ficus de vertice mortem.*

3. Some acquaint us with the time when it was done, viz. the next day after he had given the kiss. So *Chrysostom. Homil. 1. de proditor. & mysterio Cæn. Dominic. Guttur prophannum quod hodie Christo extendis ad osculum, crastinò es illud extendurus ad laqueum.* But there are two, that is, *Euthymius* and *Oecumenius*, that tell us, that the hanging did

did not kill him, but that either the rope broke, or that he was cut down, and afterwards cast himself down headlong, as it is related in the before-mentioned place of the *Acts*: *Agnitus à quibusdam depositus est, ne prefocaretur, denique postquam in secreto quodam loco modico vixisset tempore preceps factus sive precipitatus, inflatus, disruptus, ac diffusus est medius, & effusa sunt omnia viscera ejus; ut in Actis. Euthym. cap. 67. in Matth. Judas suspendio è vita non discessit, sed supervixit, dejectus est enim priusquam prefocaretur, idque Apostolorum Acta indicant quod pronus crepuit medius, Occumen. in Act.* And this may serve to reconcile these two seemingly disagreeing Scriptures.

*That our Fathers after the Flood erected the Tower of Babel.]* For this see what the Author saith in his *Pseudodox. Epidemic. l. 7. cap. 6.*

*And cannot but commend the* Sect. 23.  
*judgment of Ptolemy.]* He means Pag. 52.  
*of Ptolemaeus Philadelphus, who founded the Library of Alexandria, which he speaks of in the*  
next

next Section, he was King of *Egypt*; and having built and furnish'd that Library with all the choicest books he could get from any part of the World; and having good correspondence with *Eleazar* the High Priest of the *Jews*, by reason that he had released the *Jews* from Captivity, who were taken by his Predecessor *Ptolemaeus Lagi*; he did by the advice of *Demetrius Phalereus* the *Athenian*, whom he had made his Library-keeper, write to *Eleazar*, desiring him that he would cause the Books of the *Jews*, which contained their Laws, to be translated for him into Greek, that he might have them to put into his Library: to which the Priest consents; and for the King's better satisfaction, sends to him Copies of the Books, and with the same 72 Interpreters skilled both in the Greek and Hebrew Language, to translate them for him into Greek; which afterwards they performed. This is for certain; but whether they translated onely the *Pentateuch*, as *St. Jerome* would have it, or together with that the books of the Prophets



phets also, as *Leo de Castro* and *Baronius* contend, I undertake not to determine: but as to that part of the story, that these Interpreters were put into so many several Cells, whilst they were about the work of translation; and notwithstanding they were thus severed, that they all translated it *totidem verbis*; it is but reason to think with *St. Jerome* (notwithstanding the great current of Authority against him) that it is no better than a fable.

*The Alcoran of the Turks* ( *I speak without prejudice* ) is an ill composed piece, containing in it vain and ridiculous errors in Philosophy, &c. ] It is now in every man's hand, having been lately translated into English; I shall therefore observe but these few particulars in it, in regard the Book it self is so common; and indeed they are not mine own, but *Lipsius* his observations. He begins, *O nugas, O deliria! primum* (saith he) *commentus est, Deum unum solidumq;* ( *ὁλόκληρον Græci exprimunt* ) *eundemq; incorporeum esse. Christum non Deum, sed magnum vatem &*



prophetam, se tamen majorem, & proximè à Deo missum; præmia qui ipsum audient Paradisum, qui post aliquot annorum millia reserabitur, ibi quatuor flumina lacte, vino, melle, aqua fluere, ibi palatia & ædificia gemmata atq; aurata esse, carnes avium suavissimarum, fructus omne genus quos sparsi jacentesq; sub umbra arborum edent: sed caput fælicitatis, viros fæminasq; majores solito magnis Genitalibus, assidua libidine, & ejus usu sine tædio aut fatione. Thele and some others that are in the Alcoran he reckons up. Sed & Physica quoque mirando (saith he) nam facit Solem & Lunam in equis vehi, illum autem in aquam calidam vespere mergi, & bene lotum ascendere atq; oriri, Stellaras in aere e catenis aureis pendere: terram in bovini cornu cuspide stabilitum, & agente se bove ac succutiente fieri terra motum; hominem autem ex hirundine aut sanguisuga nasci, &c. Just. Lips. Monit. & exempl. Politic. cap.3.

*I believe besides Zoroaster there were divers others that were before Moses.]*

*Moses.* ] Zoroaster was long before *Moses*, and of great name; he was the Father of *Ninus*, *Justin. l. 1.* *Si quamlibet modicum emolumentum probaveritis, ego ille sim Carinondas, vel Damigeron, vel is Moses, vel Jannes, vel Appollonius, vel ipse Dardanus, vel quicumq; alius post Zoroastrem & Hostanem inter Magos celebratus est. Apuleius in Apol.*

Others with as many groans deplore the combustion of the Library of Alexandria. ] This was that Library before spoken of, set up by *Ptolomeus Philadelphus*; in which 'tis reported by *Ammianus Marcellinus* there were 700000 volumes; it was burnt by *Jul. Caesar's* means, whose Navy being environed before *Alexandria*, he had no means to keep off the Enemy, but by flinging of fire, which at length caught the Library and consumed it, as *Plutarch* has it in *Vita Caesaris*: but notwithstanding we have no reason to believe it was quite consumed, because *Sucton. in Claudius*, tells us, that that Emperour added another to it; and there must be somewhat before, if

it were an addition; but true it is, too many of the Books perished: to repair which loss, care was taken by *Domitian* the Emperour, as the same *Sueton.* and *Aurel. Victor* do relate.

*I would not omit a copy of Enoch's Pillars, had they many nearer Authors than Josephus, &c. ]* For this the Story is, that *Enoch*, or his father *Seth*, having been inform'd by *Adam*, that the World was to perish once by water, and a second time by fire, did cause two Pillars to be erected, the one of Stone against the water, and another of Brick against the fire; and that upon those Pillars was engraven all such learning as had been delivered to, or invented by mankind; and that thence it came that all knowledge and learning was not lost by means of the Floud, by reason that one of the Pillars (though the other perished) did remain after the Floud; and *Josephus* witnesseth, till his time, *lib. 1. Antiq. Judaic. cap. 3.*

758 Of those three great inventions of Germany, there are two which are not without their incommodities ] those two

two he means are *Printing* and *Gunpowder*, which are commonly taken to be *German* Inventions; but *Artillery* was in *China* above 1500 years since, and *Printing* long before it was in *Germany*, if we may believe *Juan Concales Mendosa* in his *Hist. of China*, lib.3. cap. 15, 16. The in-commodities of these two inventions, are well described by *Sam. Daniel*, l.6. of the *Civil Wars*.

Fierce Nemesis, mother of fate and change,  
Sword-bearer of th' eternal providence,  
Turns her stern look at last into the West,  
As griev'd to see on earth such happy rest;  
And for Pandora calleth presently,  
Pandora Joves fair gift, that first deceived  
Poor Epimetheus in his imbecility.  
That though he had a wondrous boon received,  
By means whereof curious mortality  
Was of all former quiet quite bereaved.  
To whom being come dec't with all qualities,  
The wrathful goddess breaks out in this wise:  
Dost thou not see in what secure estate  
Those flourishing fair West. rn parts remain?  
As if they had made covenant with fate,  
To be exempted, free from others pain,  
At one with their desires, friends with debate,  
In peace with Pride, content with their own  
gain.

*Their bounds contain their mindes , their  
mindes applyed*

*To have their bonds with plenty beautified,*

*Devotion ( Mother of Obedience )*

*Bears such a hand on their credulity,*

*That it abates the spirit of eminence,*

*And busies them with humble piety :*

*For see what works, what infinite expence,*

*What Monuments of zeal they edifie,*

*As if they would, so that no stop were found,*

*Fill all with Temples, make all holy ground.*

*But we must cool this all-believing zeal,*

*That hath enjoy'd so fair a turn so long &c.*

*Dislike of this first by degrees shall steal,*

*As upon souls of men perswaded wrong ;*

*And that the sacred power which thus hath  
wrought,*

*Shall give her self the sword to cut her throat.*

*Go therefore thou with all thy stirring train*

*Of swelling Sciences (the gifts of grief)*

*Go loose the links of that soul-binding chain,*

*Inlarge this uninquisitive Belief :*

*Call up mens spirits, that simpleness retain,*

*Enter their hearts, and knowledge make the  
Thief*

*To open all the doors to let in light,*

*That all may all things see, but what is right.*

*Opinion arm against opinion (grown)*

*Make new-born contradictions still arise, (sown*

*As if Thebes Founder (Cadmus) tongues had*

*In stead of teeth, for greater mutinies :*

*Bring new defended faith against faith known,*

*Weary the soul with contrarieties,*

*Till*

*Till all Religion become Retrograde,  
And that fair tye the mask of sin be made.  
And better to effect a speedy end,  
Let there be found two fatal Instruments,  
The one to publish, th' other to defend  
Impious contention, and proud discontents :  
Make that instamped characters may send  
Abroad to thousands, thousand mens intents ;  
And in a moment may dispatch much more,  
Than could a world of pens perform before ;  
Whereby all quarrels, titles, secrecies,  
May unto all be presently made known,  
Factions prepar'd parties allur'd to rise,  
Seditions under fair pretences sown ;  
Whereby the vulgar may become so wise  
That with a self-presumption overgrown,  
They may of deepest mysteries debate,  
Controul their betters, censure acts of State.  
And then when this dispersed mischief shall  
Have brought confusion in each mystery,  
Call'd up contempts of State in general,  
And ripen'd the humour of impiety,  
Then take the other engine, wherewithal  
They may torment their self-wrought misery ;  
And scourge each other in so strange a wise,  
As time or tyrants never could devise, &c.*

Printing.

Guns.

*See Bellermon. in his Dissertat.  
polit. dissert. 29. and 30.*

For the other Invention, the Lu-  
tine Annotator doubts whether the



Author means Church-Organs, or Clocks? I suppose he means Clocks, because I find that Invention reckon'd by a *German*, with the other two, as a remarkable one. It is by *Busbequius*, speaking of the *Turks*, who hath these words: *Festes majores minoresq; bombarda, multa; alia quæ ex nostris excogitata ipsi ad se avertunt; ut libros tamen typis excuderent, horologia in publico haberent, nondum adduci potuerunt. Epist. Legat. Turcic.* I suppose if he had known any Invention which next to the other two had been greater than this, he would not have nam'd this; and this being the next considerable, we have no cause to doubt but the Author meant it.

*To maintain the Trade and Mystery of Typographers. ]* Of this, *Cunæus* in his *Satyre Sardi vœnales*. *Qui bis in anno nomen suum ad Germanorum nundinas non transmittit, eruditionem suam in ordinem coactam credit, itaq; nunquam tot fungi una pluvia nascuntur, quot nunc libri uno die.*

*Seet. 25. The Turk in the bulk he now stands, is beyond all hope of conversion. ] That*  
is,

is, in respect of his great strength, against which it is not probable the Christians will prevail, as it is observed by *Monsieur de Silhon*. *La Race des Ottomans* (saith he) *que oste à Dieu la Religion qu'il a revelee, & aux hommes la liberte que le droit des Gens leur laisse a fait tant de progres depuis trois Cens & quelques annees qu'il semble qu'elle n'ait plus rien a craindre de dehors, & que son empire ne puisse perir que par la corruption de dedans, & par la dissolution des parties qui composent un corps si vaste. Mr. de Silhon en son Minist. d'Estat. l. i. c.*

*None can more justly boast of persecutions, and glory in the number and valour of martyrs. ]* Of the fortitude of the Christians in this particular, *Minutius Felix*, in the person of the Ethnique, hath these words: *Permirra stultitia & incredibili audacia spernunt tormenta presentia, dum incerta metuunt & futura; & dum mori post mortem timent, interim mori non timent.* And afterwards, when he speaks in the person of the Christian, he saith, that Christian-  
women

women and children have in this surpassed *Scævola* and *Regulus*: *Viros* (saith he) *cum Mutio vel cum Atilio Regulo comparo* : *pueri & muliercula nostra cruces & Tormenta, feras & omnes suppliciorum terribulas inspirata patientia dotoris itludunt.* Minut. in Octav. vide *Aug. de Civ. Dei*, l. 1. c. 23, 24.

If we shall strictly examine the circumstances and requisites which Aristotle requires to true and perfect valour, we shall find the name onely in his Master Alexander, ( that is, no more than the name ) and as little in that Roman Worthy Julius Cæsar. ] *Aristot. 3. Ethic. cap. 6.* amongst other requisites, requires to valour, that it keep a mediocrity betwixt audacity and fear ; that we thrust not our selves into danger when we need not ; that we spare not to shew our valour when occasion requires : He requires for its proper object, Death ; and to any death, he prefers death in war, because thereby a man profits his Country and Friends, and that he calls *mors honesta*, an honest or honourable death : and there-  
upon

thereupon he defines a valiant man to be, *Is qui, morte honesta propofita, iifq; omnibus qua cum sint repentina mortem adfuerunt metu vacat.* So that by the Author's faying, there was onely the name in *Alexander*, he means onely that which is rendred in the two laft words, *metu vacans*, and not the reft that goes to make up the definition of a valiant man, which is very truely affirmed of *Alexander*, who expofed himfelf to hazzard many times when there was no caufe for it: As you may read in *Curtius*, he did, in the fieg of *Tyrus*, and many other ways. *Cettuy-cy femble recercher & courir a force les dangiers comme un impetueux torrent, qui choque & attaque fans difcretion, & fans choifir tout ce qu'il rencontre*, faith *Montaign*, fpeaking of *Alexander*, l. 2. des *Eſſ.* cap. 34. And for *Cæſar*, it cannot be denied, but in his Wars he was many times (though not fo generally as *Alexander*) more adventurous than reaſon military cou'd warrant to him; and therefore *Lucan* gives him no better character than

*Acer*

*Acer & indomitus quo spes quoque ira vocasset  
Ferre manum, &c.*

Lucan. lib. i.

To instance in some particulars: with what an inconsiderable strength did he enterprize the Conquest of *Egypt*, and afterwards went to at-  
taque the Forces of *Scipio* and *Juba*, which were ten times more than his own? after the Battle of *Pharsalia*, having sent his Army before into *Asia*, and crossing the Hellespont with one single vessel, he there meets *Lucius Cassius* with ten men of War, he makes up to him, summons him to render, and he does it. In the famous and furious siege of *Alexia*, where he had 80000 men to make defence against him, and an Army of one hundred and nine thousand horse, and two hundred and forty thousand foot, all marching towards him, to raise his siege, yet for all that, he would not quit the siege, but first fought with those without, and obtain'd a great Victory over them, and soon afterwards brought the besieged to his mercy.

*The*

*The Council of Constance condemns* Sect. 26.  
 John Husse for an Heretick; the Pag. 48. 62  
*Stories of his own Party style him a*  
*Martyr.*] John Husse did agree with  
 the Papists against us in the point of  
 Invocation of Saints, Prayers and Sa-  
 crifice for the Dead, free Will, good  
 Works, confession of Sins, seven Sa-  
 craments, &c. *Gordon. Hunt. l. contr.*  
*3. de Sacr. Euch. cap. 17.* Yet was  
 he condemned for maintaining cer-  
 tain Articles said by that Council to  
 be heretical and seditious, and was  
 burnt for Heresie. Now as I will not  
 take upon me to say he was an *Here-*  
*tick*, so can I not maintain that, he  
 was a *Martyr*, if it be but for this one  
 Article, which in the 15 Sess. of that  
 Council was objected against him,  
 which he did acknowledge, but  
 would not recal, *i. e. Nullus est*  
*Dominus civilis, dum est in pec-*  
*cato mortali.* If that Doctrine  
 should be believed, we shall have  
 little obedience to civil Magi-  
 strates; and without that, how  
 miserable is humane condition?  
 That which begat compassion to-  
 wards Husse in those of his own  
 Party



Party was, that he had a safe conduct from the Emperour *Sigismund*; and therefore it was, say they, a violation of publique faith in the *Council* and *Emperour* in putting to him to death.

*That wise Heathen Socrates that suffered on a fundamental point of Religion, the Unity of God. ]* That *Socrates* suffered on this point, divers Christian Writers do object to the *Ethniques*, as *Justin Martyr*, *Apol.* 2. *Euseb.* 1. 5. *de preparat. Evangelic.* c. 14. *Tertul.* in *Apolog.* cap. 14. and *Lactant.* *de iustitia*, cap. 15<sup>th</sup> whose words are these: *Plato quidem multa de uno Deo locutus est, a quo ait constitutum esse mundum, sed nihil de Religione; somniaverat enim Deum, non cognoverat. Quod si iustitia defensionem vel ipse vel quilibet alius implere voluisset, imprimis Deorum Religiones evertere debuit, quia contraria pietati. Quod quidem Socrates quia facere tentavit in carcerem coniectus est, ut jam tunc appareret quid esset futurum iis hominibus qui iustitiam veram defendere, Deoque singulari servire capissent.* I

*I have often pitied the miserable Bishop that suffered in the cause of Antipodes. ] The suffering was, that he lost his Bishoprick for denying the Antipodes. Vid. Aventin. in Hist. Boio. Besides him, there were other Church-men of great note, that denied Antipodes, as Lactantius, Augustin, and Bede.*

*I hold that God can do all things: Sect. 27. How he should work contradictions, I Pag. do not understand, yet dare not therefore deny. ] Who would not think the Author had taken this from Mr. Montaign, whose words are, Il m'a tous jours semble qu'à un homme Chrétien, cette sorte de parler est plein d'indiscretion & d'irreverence [ Dieu ne se peut disdire, ] [ Dieu ne peut faire cecy ou cela. ] je ne trouve pas bon d'enfermer ainsi la puissance divine sous les loix de nostre parole. Et l'apparence qui s'offre à nous en ses propositions, il la faudroit représenter plus reverence, & plus Religieusement. Liv. 2. des Ess. c. 12.*

*I cannot see why the Angel of God should question Esdras to recal the time past, if it were beyond his own power,*

*power, or that God should pose mortality in that which he was not able to perform himself. ]* Sir K. Digby in his Notes upon this place saith, There is no contradiction in this, because he saith it was but putting all things that had motion into the same state they were in at that moment, unto which time was to be reduced back, and from thence letting it travel on again by the same motions, &c. which God could do. But under favour, the contradiction remains, if this were done that he mentions; for Time depends not at all upon motion, but has a being altogether independent of it, and therefore the same revolution would not bring back the same time, for that was efflux'd before; as in the time of *Josbua*, when the Sun stood still, we cannot but conceive though there were no motion of the Sun, but that there was an efflux of Time, otherwise, how could the Text have it, *That there was not any day, before or after, that was so long as that?* for the length of it must be understood in respect of the flux of time.

The

The reasoning of Sir *Kenelm* is founded upon the opinion of *Aristot.* who will needs have it, that Time cannot be without mutation; he gives this for a reason, because when we have slept, and cannot perceive any mutation to have been, we do therefore use to connect the time of our sleeping and of our awaking together, and make but one of it: to which it may be answered, although some mutation be necessary, that we may mark the flux of time, it doth not therefore follow that the mutation is necessary to the flux it self.

*I excuse not Constantine from a Sect. 28. fall off his Horse; or a mischief Pag. 62. from his enemies, upon the wearing those nails, &c.] Hac de re videatur P. Diac. hist. miscell.*

*I wonder how the curiosity of wi- Sect. 29. ser heads could pass that great and Pag. 63. indisputable miracle, the cessation of Oracles.]* There are three opinions touching the manner how the predictions of these Oracles were perform'd: Some say by vapour, some by the intelligences, or influence; of the Heavens, and others  
S say

say by the assistance of the Devils. Now the indisputable miracle the Author speaks of, is, that they ceas'd upon the coming of Christ; and it is generally so believed, and the Oracle of *Delphos* delivered to *Augustus*, mentioned by the Author in this Section, is brought to prove it, which is this:

*Me puer Hebraeus divos Deus ipse gubernans  
Cedere sede jubet, tristemq; redire sub orcum.  
Aris ergo dehinc tacitus discedito nostris.*

But yet it is so far from being true that their cessation was miraculous, that the truth is, there never were any predictions given by these Oracles at all.

That their cessation was not upon the coming of Christ, we have luculent testimony out of *Tully*, in his 2. *lib. de Divinat.* which he writ many years before Christ was born; who tells us that they were silent (and indeed he never thought they were otherwise) long before that time, in-somuch that they were come into contempt: *Cur isto modo jam oracula Delphis non eduntur, non modo mo-stra*

*stratitate, sed jamdū jam ut nihil possit esse contemptius.* So that for that of *Delphos*, which was the most famous of them all, we see we have no reason to impute the cessation of it to *Christ*; Why therefore should we do so for any of the rest?

2. For their predictions, let us consider the three several ways before-mentioned, whereby they are supposed to operate; and from thence see whether it be probable that any such Oracles ever were.

The first Opinion is, that it was by exhalation or vapour drawn up from the earth; and gives this for a reason of their being, that they were for a time nourished by those exhalations; and when those ceased, and were exhausted, the Oracles famish'd and died for want of their accustomed sustenance: this is the far-fetcht reason given by *Plutarch* for their defect; but 'twas not devised by him, but long before, as appears, in that *Tully* scoffs at it, *lib. de divinatione*. *De vino aut salsamento potes loqui* (saith he) *quæ evanescent vetustate*. This seem'd absurd to others;



who do therefore say this was not to be attributed to any power of the Earth, but to the power of the Heavens, or *Intelligences Cælestial*; to certain aspects, whereof, they say, the Statua's of those Oracles were so adapted, that they might divine and foretel future events. But yet to others, this way seemeth as absurd as the others; for, say they, admitting that there were an efficacy in the Heavens, more than in the Earth; yet how can it be that men should come by the skill to fit the Statua's to the Aspects or influences of the Heavens? or if at any time they had such skill, why should not the same continue the rather, because men are more skilled in the motions of the Heavens, of later than in the former time? Again, they do not see how it should be that the cause should be of less excellency than the effect; for if a man (say they) can by his industry make such Oracles, why can he not produce the same effect in another man? for if you affirm that the Heavens influence is requisite, they will tell you

you that Influence may happen as well to a man, as to a Statua of wood or stone. Therefore the third sort being unsatisfied, which either of the former ways conclude, that this was perform'd by the Devil; but for that it will appear as contrary to Reason and Philosophy, as either of the former; for Philosophy teacheth that things singular, or individual, are to be known only by sense, or by such an Intellect, as doth know by its Essence; and Theology teacheth that God only knoweth the heart, and that the Devil doth not know by sense, nor by essence; and since 'tis admitted by all, that most of the answers that were pretended to be given by those Oracles, were *de rebus singularibus*, or *individuis*; it is evident that these predictions were not perform'd by Devils. How then? why those predictions which the ignorant Heathen took to come from Heaven, and some Christians (not less ignorant) from the Devil, was nothing but the juggling and impostures of the Priests, who from with-

in the Statua's gave the answers; which Princes connived at, that they might upon occasion serve their turns upon the ignorance of the people; and the learned men, for fear of their Princes, durst not speak against it. *Lucian* hath noted it, and so a more authentick Author, *Minut. Felix*, in *Octav.* *Authoritatem quasi presentis numinis consequuntur dum inspirantur interim vatibus.* But in process of time, the people grew less credulous of their Priests, and so the Oracles became to be silent: *Cum jam* (saith he) *Apollo versus facere defisset, cujus tunc tantum illud & ambiguum defecit oraculum: Cum & politiores homines & minus creduli esse ceperunt.* Sir *H. Blount* in his *Levantine* voyage, saith he saw the Statua of *Memnon* so famous of old; he saith it was hollow at top, and that he was told by the *Egyptians* and *Jews* there with him, that they had seen some enter there, and come out at the Pyramid, two Bows-shoot off; then (saith he) I soon believ'd the Oracle, and believe all the rest to have been such; which indeed,

is

is much easier to imagine than that it was perform'd by any of the three ways before mentioned. St. *Aug.* hath compos'd a Book, where he handleth this point at large, and concludeth that the Devils can no more foretel things to come, than they are able to discern the thoughts that are within us. *Aug. lib. de Scientia Demon.*

Till I laugh'd my self out of it with a piece of Justin, where he delivers that the Children of Israel for being scabbed were banished out of Egypt. ] These words of Justin are, *Sed cum scabiem Egyptii & pruriginem paterentur, responso moniti, cum (sc. Moysen) cum agris, nepestis ad plures serperet, terminis Egypti pelunt. l. 36.* But he is not singular in this, for Tacitus tells us, *Hist. lib. 5. Plurimi authores consentiunt orta per Egyptum tæbe quæ corpora fœdaret, Regem (Ochorim) (he means Pharaoh) adito Hammonis oraculo remedium petentem purgare Regnum & id genus hominum — alias in terras avertere jussim. Et paulo inferius, Quod ipsos scabies quondam turpaverat.*

Sect. 30.

Pag. 65.

*I have ever believed, and do now know that there are Witches.]* What sort of Witches they were that the Author knew to be such, I cannot tell; for those which he mentions in the next Section, which proceed upon the principles of Nature, none have denyed that such there are; against such it was, that the *Lex Julia de veneficiis* was made, that is, those, *Qui noxio poculo aut impuri medicaminibus aliquem fuerint infectati.* *Al. ab Alex. Gen. Dier. l. 3. c. 1.* But for the opinion that there are Witches which co-operate with the Devil, there are Divines of great note, and far from any suspicion of being irreligious, that do oppose it. Certainly there is no ground to maintain their being from the story of Oracles, as may be seen from what hath been said on the precedent Section.

*Nor have the power to be so much as Witches.]* *Pliny* saith, so it fared with *Nero*, who was so hot in pursuit of the Magick Arts, that he did dedicate himself wholly to it, and yet

yet could never satisfie himself in that kind, though he got all the cunning men he could from the East, for that purpose, *Plin. l. 3. Nat. Hist. c. 1.*

*By conjunction with the Devil. ]* Though, as the Author saith, it be without a possibility of Generation, yet there are great men that hold, that such carnality is performed; as *August. in Levit. Aquin. l. 2. de qu. 73. art. ad 2. and Justin Martyr. Apol. 1.*

*It is no new opinion of the Church* Sect. 33.  
*of Rome, but an old one of Pytha-* Pag. 70.  
*goras and Plato. ]* This appears by *Apuleius* a Platonist, in his Book *de Deo Socratis*, and elsewhere. See *Mede's Apostasie of the latter times*, where out of this and other Authors, you shall see collected all the learning *de Geniis*.

*I cannot with those in that great Father securely interpret the work of the first day, Fiat lux, to the creation of Angels. ]* This great Father is *S. Chrysost. Homil. in Genes.* but yet 'tis his opinion, as also of *Athanasius* and *Theodoret*, that there is  
express



express mention of the creation of Angels, so that they need not rest upon this place, which they admit to be somewhat obscure. The place which they take to be express, is that of the <sup>104</sup>~~136~~ Psalm, where David begins to speak of the Majesty of God, in this manner: *Confessionem sive majestatem & decorem induisti, amictus lumine sicut vestimento*: Next he speaks of the Heavens, saying, *Thou hast stretched them out over us like a Tent*. Then he speaks of the Angels, *Qui facis Angelos tuos spiritus*. Now if it shall be objected, that this expression is onely of the time present, and without relation to the Creation: Answer is given by Divines, that the *Hebrews* have but three Tenses in their Verbs, the Preterperfect, Present, and Future Tense; and have not the use of the Preterimperfect, and Preterpluperfect, as the *Greeks* and *Latines* have; whence it ariseth, that the Present Tense with the *Hebrews*, may, as the sentence will bear it, be translated by the Preterimperfect, as also by the Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect.

terpluperfect Tense ; and this (they say) is practised in this very passage, where the Phrase, as it is in Hebrew, may be rendred as well *qui faciebas*, as *qui facis Angelos*, &c. Vid. Hieronym. in Ep. ad Titum, & Thom. Aqu. 1. p. qu. 61. art. 3. The Latine Annotator saith, the Father meant by the Author, is St. Aug. and quotes him, l. 11. de Civ. Dei, cap. 9. which place I have perused, and find the expression there used by St. Aug. is but hypothetical ; for these are his words : *Cumenim dixit Fiat lux & facta est lux si rectè in hac luce creatio intelligitur Angelorum*, &c. Where you see 'tis but with a *Si*, and therefore I conceive the Author intends not him, but Chrysostom.

Where it subsists alone, 'tis a Spiritual Substance, and may be an Angel, ] Epicurus was of this opinion, and St. Aug. in Enchirid. ad Laurentium.

Moses decided that Question, and all is salved with the new term of Creation. ] That is it which Aristotle could not understand, he had learned that

that *ex nihilo nihil fit*, and therefore when he found those that disputed that the World had a beginning, did maintain that it was generated, and he could not understand any generation, but out of matter præ-existent *in infinitum*, therefore he took their opinion to be absurd, and upon that ground principally, concluded the World to be eternal; whereas, if he had understood that there may be such a thing as Creation, he had not done it, for that solves his *processus in infinitum*. Take from *Plato*, that the World had a beginning, and from *Aristot.* that it was not generated, and you have the (true) Christian opinion.

Sect. 36.

Pag. 80.

*In our study of Anatomy, there is a mass of mysterious Philosophy, and such as reduced the very Heathens to Divinity.] So it did Galen, who considering the order, use, and disposition of the parts of the body, brake forth into these words: Compono hic profecto Canticum in creatoris nostri laudem, quod ultra res suas ornare voluit melius quam ulla arte*

arte possent. Galen. 3. de usu partium.

I cannot believe the wisdom of Sect. 37. Pythagoras did ever positively, and Pag. 81. in a literal sense, affirm his Metempsychosis. ] In this the opinion of Grotius is contrary to the Author, who saith this opinion was begotten by occasion of the opinion of other Philosophers, who in their discourses of the life that is to be after this, brought such arguments, *Quæ non magis de homine quam de bestiis procedunt.* And therefore, saith he, *mirandum non est, si transitum animarum de hominibus in bestias, de bestias in homines alii commenti sunt.* Lib. 2. de ver. Relig. Christ. (vide etiam Annotat. ejusd.) But yet there is a shrewd objection against the opinion of Pythagoras, if he did mean it literally, which is cast in by the Sectators of Democritus and Epicurus, which Lucretius remembers in these Verses:

*Præterea si immortalis natura anima  
Constat, & in corpus nascentibus insinuat,  
Cur super ante ætatem meminisse nequimils?*

*Nec vestigia gestarum rerum ulla tenemus?*

Nam

*Non sit antequam sit animi mutata potestas;  
Omnis ut actuum excideret retinentia rerum,  
Non ut opinor ea ab leto jam longiter errat.*

This Argument, 'tis true, is *pro falso contra falsum*, but yet holds *ad hominem* so far, that it is not likely (as the Author saith) but *Pythagoras* would observe an absurdity in the consequence of his *Metempsychosis*; and therefore did not mean it literally, but desired only to express the Soul to be immortal, which he and the other Philosophers that were of that opinion, who had not heard of Creation, could not conceive, unless it must be taken for truth, that the soul were before the body; so saith *Lactantius* of them. *Non putaverunt aliter fieri posse ut supersint animæ post corpora, nisi videntur fuisse ante corpora.* *De fals.*

*Sap. c. 18.*

Sect. 41. I do not envy the temper of Crows  
Pag. 89. or Daws.] As *Theophrastus* did, who  
dying, accused Nature for giving  
them, to whom it could not be of  
any concernment, so large a life; and  
to man, whom it much concern'd,  
so

so short a one. *Cic. Tusc. quest.*  
l. 3. How long Daws live, see in  
*Not. ad Sect. 41.*

Not upon Cicero's ground, because *Sect. 42.*  
*I have liv'd them well.* ] I suppose *Pag. 91.*

he alludes to an expression in an Epistle of Cicero, written in his Exile, to his wife and children, where he hath these words to his wife: *Quod reliquum est, te sustenta mea Terentia ut potes, honestissime viximus, floruvimus. Non vitium nostrum sed virtus nos afflixit, peccatum est nulum nisi quod non una animum cum ornamentis amisimus, l. 24. Ep. 4.*

And stand in need of Eson's Bath before threescore. ] Eson was the Father of Jason, and, at his request, was by Medea, by the means of this Bath, restored to his youth. Ingredients that went into it, and the description of Medea's performance, Ovid gives you, l. 7. *Metam.*

*Interea calido positum medicamen abeno  
Fervet & exultat, spumisque tumentibus albet.*

*Illic Amonia radices valle resectas,*

*Seminaque & flores, & succos incoquit atros*

*Adjicit extremo lapides Oriente petitos,*

*Et quas Oceani refluxum mare lavit arenas:*

*Addidit*



Addidit exceptas luna de nocte pruinas,  
 Et Strigis infames ipsis cum carnibus alas,  
 Inq; virum soliti vultus mutare ferinos,  
 Ambigui prosecta lupi, nec defuit illi  
 Squamea Cinyphæi tenuis membrana Chelindri,  
 Vivacisq; jecur cervi; quibus insuper addit.  
 Ora, caputq; novem cornicis secula passæ.  
 His & mille aliis, postquam sine nomine rebus:  
 Propositum instruxit mortali barbara munus  
 Arenti ramo jampridem mitis olive  
 Omnia confudit, summisq; immiscuit ima:  
 Ecce, vetus calido versatus stipes abeno  
 Fit viridis primo, nec longo tempore frondes  
 Induit, & subito gravidis oneratur olivis.  
 At quacunq; cavo spumas ejecit abeno  
 Ignis, & in terram gutta cecidere calentes,  
 Vernat humus, floresq; & mollia pabula surgunt.  
 Quæ simulac vidit, stricto Medea recludit.  
 Ense senis jugulum, veteremq; exte, cruorem  
 Passa replet succis, quos postquam combibit Æ-  
 son,  
 Aut ore acceptas, aut vulnere, barba comæq;  
 Lanitie posita, nigrum rapuere colorem.  
 Pulsa fugit macies: abeunt pallorq; situsque:  
 Adjectoq; cavæ supplentur corpore rugæ;  
 Membraq; luxuriant. Æson miratur, & olim.  
 Ante quater denos hunc se reminiscitur annos.  
 Dissimilemq; animum subiit, etate relicta.

Sect. 44. Extol the Suicide of Cato. ] As  
 Pag. 94. doth Seneca in several places; but  
 Lactantius saith, he cast away his  
 life;

life, to get the reputation of a *Platonic* Philosopher, and not for fear of *Cæsar*; and 'tis very probable he was in no great fear of death, when he slept so securely the night before his death, as the story reports of him.

*Emori no'o, sed me esse mortuum nihil curo.* Were I of *Cæsar's* Religion.] I doubt not but here is a fault of the Press, and that instead of *Cæsar* it should be *Cicero*. I meet not with any such saying imputed to *Cæsar*, nor any thing like it, but that he preferr'd a sudden death, (in which he had his option) to any other; but I meet with such a saying in *Cicero*, quoted out of *Epicharmus* [*Emori nolo, sed me esse mortuum nihili æstimo.*] Where *Cicero* sustaineth the part of the *Epicure*, that there is no hurt in being dead, since there remaineth nothing after it. *Cic. 1. Thusc. qu. non procul ab initio.*

Or whence *Lucan* learn'd to say, Sect. 45. *Communis mundo superest rogas, &c.*] Pag. 98. Why, *Lucan* was a Stoique, and 'twas an opinion among them almost generally, that the world should perish by fire; therefore without doubt

T

from

from them he learned it. *Cælum quoque cum omnibus quæ in cælo continentur, ita ut cæpisset desinere, fontium dulci aqua marisve nutriri, in vim ignis abiturum. Stoicis constans opinio est, quod consumpto humore mundus hic omnis ignescat. Minutius in Octav.* But *Minutius* should have excepted *Boetius*, *Possidonius*, *Diogenes Babylonius*, and *Zeno Sidonius*, who were *Stoiques*, and yet did not think the world should be destroyed by fire, nor yet by any other means.

Sect. 46. How shall we interpret *Elias* 6000  
 Pag. 99. years, &c.] *Lactant.* is very positive that the world should last but 6000 years; but his reason for it is somewhat strange; thus it is, *Quoniam sex diebus cuncta Dei opera perfecta sunt, per secula sex, i. e. annorum sex millia manere in hoc statu mundum necesse est. De Divino premio, cap. 14.*

Sect. 47. *Ipsa sui pretium virtus sibi, is but a*  
 Pag. 101. cold principle.] It is a Stoical principle. *Quæris enim aliquid supra summum, interrogas quid petam extra virtutem ipsam. Nihil enim habet melius*

*melius pretium sui est. Senec. de vit. beat. c. 9.*

*That honest artifice of Seneca.]* What that artifice was, is to be seen in *Senec. l. i. Ep. ep. 11.* *Aliquis vir bonus nobis eligendus est, & semper ante oculos habendus, ut sic tanquam illo spectante vivamus & omnia tanquam illo vidente faciamus.* Et Paulo post; *Elige itaq; Catonem; si hic videtur tibi nimis rigidus, elige remissioris animi virum Lelium, &c.* which though, as the Author saith, it be an honest Artifice, yet cannot I but commend the party, and prefer the direction of him (who ever he were) who in the Margin of my *Seneca*, over against those words, wrote these: *Quin Deo potius qui semper omnibus omnia agentibus non tanquam sed reipsa adest, & videt; ac etiam ut Testis, vindex et punitor est malè agentis.*

*I have tryed, if I could reach that great Resolution of his (that is of Seneca) to be honest without a thought of Heaven or Hell.]* \* *Seneca* brags he could do this, in these words: *Si scirem deos peccata ignoscituros, et* \* Tho. Aquin. in com in Boet. de consolat. prope finem. *homines*

*homines ignoraturos adhuc propter vitiatem peccati peccare erubescerem. Credat Judeus appella: non ego. —*

*And Atheists have been the onely Philosophers.] That is, if nothing remain after this life. St. Aug. was of this opinion. Disputabam — Epicurum accepturum fuisse palmam in animo meo, nisi ego credidissem post mortem restare animæ vitam, &c. Aug. l. 6. conf. cap. 16.*

Sect. 48. God by a powerful voice shall com-  
 Pag. 104. mand them back into their proper shapes.] So Minutius. *Caterum quis tam stultus est aut brutus, ut audeat repugnare hominem à Deo ut primum potuit fingi, ita posse denuo reformari, nihil esse post obitum, & ante ortum nihil fuisse; sicut de nihilo nasci licuit, ita de nihilo licere reparari. Porro difficilior est id quod sit incipere, quod quam id quod fuerit iterare. Tuperire Deo credis, si quid nostris oculis hebetibus subtrahitur. Corpus omne sive arefcit in pulverem sive in humorem solvitur, vel in cinerem comprimitur, vel in nidorem tenuatur, subducitur nobis, sed Deo elementorum in custodi inseruntur.*

*In*

in Octav. Vide Grot. de veritate Relig. Christian. ubi (lib. 2.) solvit objectionem, quod dissoluta corpora restituere nequeunt.

Or conceive a flame that can either Sect. 50.  
prey upon, or purifie the substance of Pag. 109.  
a soul.] Upon this ground Psellus  
lib. 1. de energia Demonum, c. 7.  
holds, That Angels have bodies,  
(though he grants them to be as  
pure, or more pure than Air is) o-  
therwise he could not apprehend  
how they should be tormented in  
Hell; and it may be upon this ground  
it was, that the Author fell into the  
error of the *Arabians*, mentioned by  
him, Sect. 7.

There are as many Hells as Anax- Sect. 51.  
agoras conceited Worlds.] I assure Pag. 112.  
my self that this is false printed, and  
that instead of *Anaxagoras* it should  
be *Anaxarchus*; for *Anaxagoras* is  
reckon'd amongst those Philoso-  
phers that maintain'd a Unity of  
the World, but *Anaxarchus* (accord-  
ing to the opinion of *Epicurus*) held  
there were infinite Worlds. This is  
he that caus'd *Alexander* to weep  
by telling him there were infinite  
T 3 worlds,



worlds, whereby *Alexander* it seems was brought out of opinion of his Geography, who before that time thought there remained nothing, or not much beyond his Conquests.

Sect. 54. *It is hard to place those Souls in*  
 Pag. 11. *Hell.*] *Lactantius* is alike charitably disposed towards those. *Non sum equidem tam iniquis ut eos putem divinare debuisse, ut veritatem per seipsos invenirent (quod fieri ego non posse confiteor) sed hoc ab eis exigo, quod ratione ipsa prestare poterunt.* *Lactant. de orig. error. c. 3.* which is the very same with Sir *K. Digbie's* expression in his Observations on this place. I make no doubt at all (saith he) but if any follow'd in the whole tenour of their lives the dictaments of right reason, but that their journey was secure to Heaven.

Sect. 55. *Aristotle transgress'd the Rule of*  
 Pag. 118. *his own Ethicks.*] And so they did all, as *Lactantius* hath observed at large. *Aristotle* is said to have been guilty of great vanity in his Clothes, of Incontinency, of Unfaithfulness to his Master *Alexander*, &c. But 'tis no wonder in him, if our great *Se-*

*neca* be also guilty, whom truly notwithstanding St. *Jerome* would have him inserted into the Catalogue of Saints, yet I think he as little deserv'd it, as many of the Heathens who did not say so well as he did, for I do not think any of them lived worse: to trace him a little. In the time of the Emperour *Claudius* we find he was banish'd for suspicion of incontinency with *Julia* the daughter of *Germanicus*. If it be said that this proceeded meerly from the spight of *Messalina*, (and that *Lipsius* did not complement with him in that kind *Apostrophe*, *Non expelit in te hac culpa, O Romani nominis & Sapientie magnæ Sol.* Not. in *Tacit.*) why then did she not cause him to be put to death, as well as she did the other, who was her Husband's Niece? This for certain, whatever his life were, he had *paginam lascivam*, as may appear by what he hath written, *de Speculorum usu*, l. 1. *Nat. Qu. cap. 16.* Which (admitting it may in a Poet, yet) how it should be excus'd in a Philosopher I know not. To look upon him

in his exile , we find that then he wrote his Epistle *De Consolat.* to *Polybius*, *Claudius* his creature (as honest a man as *Pallas* or *Narcissus*) and therein he extols him and the Emperour to the Skies ; in which he did grossly prevaricate, and lost much of his reputation, by seeking a discharge of his Exile by so sordid a means. Upon *Claudius* his marriage with *Agrippina*, he was recall'd from Banishment by her means and made *Prætor* ; then he forgets the Emperour, having no need of him, labours all he can to depress him, and the hopeful *Britannicus*, and procured his Pupil *Nero* to be adopted and design'd Successor, and the Emperour's own Son to be disinherited ; and against the Emperour whom he so much praised when he had need of him, after his death he writes a scurrilous Libel. In *Nero's* Court, how ungratefully doth he behave himself towards *Agrippina* ! who although she were a wicked woman, yet she deserv'd well of him, and of her Son too, who yet never was at rest till he had taken away her life

life, and upon suspicion cast in against her by this man. Afterwards not to mention that he made great haste to grow rich, which should not be the business of a Philosopher, towards *Nero* himself, how well did it become his Philosophy to play the Traitor against him, and to become a complice in the Conspiracy of *Piso*? And then as good a Tragedian as he was, me thinks he doth in *extremo actu deficere*, when he must needs perswade *Paulina*, that excellent Lady his wife, to die with him: what should move him to desire it? it could in his opinion be no advantage to her, for he believ'd nothing of the immortality of the Soul; I am not satisfied with the reason of *Tacitus*, *Ne sibi unicè dilectam ad injurias relinqueret*, because he discredits it himself in almost the next words, where he saith, *Nero* bore her no ill will at all, (and would not suffer her to die) it must surely be then, because he thought he had not liv'd long enough (being not above 114 years old, so much he was) and had not the fortitude to die, unless  
he

he might receive some confirmation in it by her example. Now let any man judg what a precious Legacy it is that he bequeaths by his nuncupative will to his friends in *Tacitus*. *Conversus ad amicos* (saith he) *quando meritis eorum referre gratiam prohiberetur, quod unum jam tamen & pulcherrimum habebat, imaginem vitæ suæ relinquere testatur.* It cannot be denied of him, that he hath said very well; but yet it must as well be affirmed, that his Practice hath run counter to his Theory, to use the Author's phrase.

*The Scepticks that affirmed they knew nothing.*] The ancient Philosophers are divided into three sorts, *Dogmatici, Academici, Sceptici*; the first were those that delivered their opinions positively; the second left a liberty of disputing *pro & contra*; the third declared that there was no knowledg of any thing, no not of this very proposition, that there is no knowledge, according to that,

—*Nihil sciri si quis putat, id quoq; nescit  
An sciri possit, quod se nil scire fatetur.*

The

*The Duke of Venice that weds himself to the Sea by a Ring of Gold, &c.]* The Duke and Senate yearly on *Ascension-day* use to go in their best attire to the Haven at *Lio*, and there by throwing a Ring into the water, do take the Sea as their spouse. *Vid. Hist. Ital. by Will. Thomas Cambro brit.* *Busbequius* reports, that there is a custom among the *Turks*, which they took from the *Greek Priests*, not much unlike unto this. *Cum Græcorum Sacerdotibus mos sit certo veris tempore aquas consecrando mare clausum veluti reſerare, ante quod tempus non facile ſe committunt fluctibus; ab ea ceremonia nec Turcæ abſunt.* *Busb. Ep. 3. legat. Turſic.*

*But the Philoſoph. r that threw his money into the Sea to avoid Avarice, &c.]* This was *Apollonius Thyaneus*, who threw a great quantity of Gold into the Sea with theſe words, *Peffundo divitias, ne peffundare ab illis.* *Polycrates* the Tyrant of *Samos* caſt the beſt Jewel he had into the Sea, that thereby he might learn to compoſe himſelf againſt the viciffitude of Fortune.

*There*



*There go so many circumstances to piece up one good action.] To make an action to be good, all the causes that concur must be good; but one bad amongst many good ones, is enough to make it vitious, according to the rule, Bonum ex causa integra, malum ex partiali.*

Sect. 56. *The vulgarity of those judgments Pag. 121. that wrap the Church of God in Strabo's Cloak, and restrain it unto Europe.] 'Tis Strabonis Tunica in the Translation, but Chlamydi would do better, which is the proper expression of the word that Strabo useth: it is not Europe) but the known part of the world that Strabo resembleth to a Cloak, and that is it the Author here alludeth to; but we have no reason to think that the resemblance of Strabo is very proper. Vid. Sir Hen. Savil in not. ad Tac. in vita Agricola.*

Sect. 57. *Those who upon a rigid application Pag. 123. of the Law, sentence Solomon unto damnation, &c.] St. Aug. upon Psal. 126. and in many other places, holds that Solomon is damned; Of the same opinion is Lyra, in 2 Reg. c. 7. & Bellarm. 1. Tom. lib. 1. Controv. c. 5.*



## THE SECOND PART.

**I** *Wonder not at the French for their* Sect. 1.  
*Frogs, Snails, and Toad-stools.* ] Pag. 127.  
 Toad-stools are not peculiar to the  
*French*; they were a great delicacy  
 among the *Romans*, as appears every  
 where in *Martial*. It was conceived  
 the Emperour *Claudius* received his  
 death by Poyson, which he took in a  
 Mushroom. *Suet. and Tac.*

*How among so many millions of* Sect. 2.  
*faces, there should be none alike.* ] It Pag. 130.  
 is reported, there have been some so  
 much alike, that they could not be  
 distinguished; as King *Antiochus*,  
 and one *Antemon*, a Plebeian of *Sy-*  
*ria*, were so much alike, that *Lao-*  
*dice*, the King's Widow, by pretend-  
 ing this man was the King, dissem-  
 bled the death of the King so long,  
 till

till according to her own mind a Successor was chosen. *Cn. Pompeius*, and one *Vibius* the Orator; *C. Plancus*, and *Rubrius* the Stage-player; *Cassius Severus* the Orator, and one *Mirmello*; *M. Messala Censorius*, and one *Menogenes*, were so much alike, that unless it were by their habit, they could not be distinguished: but this you must take upon the faith of *Pliny*, (*lib. 7. c. 12.*) and *Solinus*, (*cap. 6.*) who as this Author tells elsewhere, are Authors not very infallible.

*What a βαρεῖς χουνομαχία and hot skirmish is betwixt S. vnd T. in Lucian,]* In his *Dialogue*, *judicium vocalium*, where there is a large Oration made to the Vowels, being Judges, by *Sigma* against *Tau*, complaining that *Tau* has bereaved him of many words which should begin with *Sigma*.

*Their Tongues are sharper than Actius his Razor.]* *Actius Navinus* was chief Augur, who (as the Story saith) admonishing *Tarqu. Priscus* that he should not undertake any action of moment, without first consulting

cunsulting the Augur, the King (shewing that he had little faith in his skill) demanded of him whether by the rules of his skill, what he had conceived in his mind might be done: to whom when *Actius* had answered it might be done, he bid him take a Whetstone which he had in his hand, and cut it in two with a Razor; which accordingly the Augur did. *Livy*. And therefore we must conceive it was very sharp. Here the Adage was cross'd, *ἔχεις τὸ ἀκόνιον*, i. e. *novacula in cotem*. *Vid. Erasm. Chiliad*.

*It is not meer Zeal to Learning, or devotion to the Muses, that wiser Princes patronize the Arts, &c. but a desire to have their names eterniz'd by the memory of their Writings.*] There is a great Scholar, who took the boldness to tell a Prince so much. *Est enim bonorum principum cum viris eruditis tacita quaedam naturalisque Societas, ut alteri ab alteris illustrentur, ac dum sibi mutuò suffragantur, & gloria principibus, & doctis autoritas concilietur.* *Politian. Ep. Ludovic. Sfort.*

*Sfort. quæ extat, lib. II. Ep. ep. I.*  
 And to this Opinion astipulates a  
 Countryman of our own, whose  
 words are these: *Ignorius esset*  
*Lucilius, nisi eum Episto!æ Seneca*  
*illustrarent. Laudibus Cesareis plus*  
*Virgilius & Varus. Lucanusque*  
*adjecerunt, quam immensum illud*  
*ærarium quo Urbem & Orbem spo-*  
*liavit. Nemo prudentiam Ithaci*  
*aut Pelidæ vires agnosceret, nisi eas*  
*Homerus divino publicasset ingenio:*  
*unde nihil mihi videtur consultius*  
*viro ad gloriam properanti fidelium*  
*favore Scriptorum. Joan. Sarisb.*  
*Polycrat. l. 8. c. 14.* And that Prin-  
 ces are as much beholding to the  
 Poets pens as their own Swords,  
*Horace tells Censorinus* with great  
 confidence. *Od. 8. l. 4. Non incisa notis*  
*&c.*

Sect. 4.

Pag. 140.

*St. Paul that calls the Cretians*  
*Lyars, doth it but indirectly, and*  
*upon quotation of one of their own*  
*Poets.] That is, Epimenides; the*  
*place is, Tit. 1. v. 12. where Paul*  
*useth this verse, taken out of Epi-*  
*menides.*

ἡγήτες αἱ τοῦτοι, κατὰ θνεία, γαστέρες ἀγροί.

*It is as bloody a thought in one way, as Nero's was in another. For by a word we wound a thousand.* ] I suppose he alludes to that passage in *Sueton.* in the life of *Nero*, where he relates that a certain person upon a time, spoke in his hearing these words,

*Ἐπεὶ θανόντων γαῖα μίχθηται πυρὶ.*

*i. e.* When I am dead let Earth be mingled with Fire. Whereupon the Emperour uttered these words, *Ἐπεὶ ζώντων, i. e.* *Yea whilst I live :* there by one word, he express'd a cruel thought, which I think is the thing he meant ; this is more cruel than the wish of *Caligula*, that the people of *Rome* had but one Neck, that he might destroy them all at a blow.

*I cannot believe the story of the Sect. 6. Italian, &c.* ] It is reported that a *Pag. 147.* certain *Italian* having met with one that had highly provoked him, put a Ponyard to his breast, and unless he would blaspheme God, told him he would kill him ; which the other doing to save his life, the *Italian* presently kill'd him, to the intent



he might be damned, having no time of Repentance.

*I have no sins that want a Name.]*  
The Author in *cap. ult. lib. ult. Pseudodox.* speaking of the Act of carnality exercised by the *Egyptian* Pollinctors with the dead carcases, saith we want a name for this, wherein neither *Petronius* nor *Martial* can relieve us; therefore I conceive the Author here means a venereal sin.

*This was the Temper of that Leacher that carnal'd with a Statua.]*  
The Latine Annotator upon this hath these words: *Roma refertur de Hispano quodam.* But certainly the Author means the Statue of *Venus Gnidia* made by *Praxiteles*, of which a certain young man became so enamoured, that *Pliny* relates, *Ferunt amore captum cum delitisset noctu simulachro cohesisse, ejusq; cupiditatis esse indicem maculum.* *Lucian* also has the story in his *Dialog. [Amores.]*

*And the constitution of Nero in his Spintrian recreations.]* The Author doth not mean the last *Nero*, but

but *Tiberius* the Emperour, whose name was *Nero* too; of whom *Sueton.* *Secessu vero Capreensī etiam sellariam excogitavit sedem arcanarum libidinum, in quam undique conquisiti puellarum & exoletorum greges monstrosiq; concubitus repertoires, quos spintrias appellabat, triplici serie connexi invicem incestarent se coram ipso, ut adpectu deficientes libidines excitaret.* *Suet. in Tib. 43.*

I have seen a Grammarian *Sec. 8.* and plume himself over a single line *Pag. 151.* in *Horace*, and shew more pride, &c. *Movent mihi stomachum Grammatistæ quidam, qui cum duas tenuerint vocabulorum origines ita se ostentant, ita venditant, ita circumferunt jactabundi, ut præ ipsis pro nihilo habendos Philosophos arbitrentur.* *Picus Mirand. in Ep. ad Hermol. Barb. quæ exstat lib. nono Epist. Politian.*

*Garsio quisq; duas postquam scit jungere partes, Sic stat, sic loquitur, velut omnes noverit artes.*

*I cannot think that Homer pin'd away upon the Riddle of the Fishermen.*] The history out of *Plutarch* is thus : Sailing from *Thebes* to the Island *Ion*, being landed and set down upon the shore, there happen'd certain Fishermen to pass by him, and he asking them what they had taken, they made him this Enigmatical answer, That what they had taken, they had left behind them ; and what they had not taken, they had with them : meaning, that because they could take no Fish, they went to loose themselves ; and that all which they had taken, they had killed, and left behind them ; and all which they had not taken, they had with them in their clothes : and that *Homer* being struck with a deep sadness because he could not interpret this, pin'd away, and at last dyed. *Pliny* alludes to this Riddle, in his *Ep.* to his Friend *Fuscus*, where giving an account of spending his time in the Country, he tells him, *Venor aliquando, sed non sine pugillaribus, ut quamvis nihil ceperim, non nihil referam.* *Plin. Ep. lib. 9. Ep. 36.*

Or that Aristot. ——— did ever  
drown himself upon the flux or re-  
flux of Euripus. ] *Laertius* reports  
that *Aristotle* dyed of a disease at  
63——years of age. For this and  
the last, see the Author in *Pseudo-*  
*dox.*

*Aristotle* doth but instruct us as  
*Plato* did him, to confute himself. ]  
In the matter of *Idea's*, Eternity of  
the world, &c.

*I could be content that we might* Sect. 9.  
*procreate like trees without conjun-* Pag. 154.  
*ction, or that there were any way*  
*to perpetuate the world without this*  
*trivial and vulgar way of Coition :*  
*It is the foolishbest act a wise man*  
*commits in all his life. ]* There was  
a *Physitian* long before the Author,  
that was of the same opinion, *Hip-*  
*pocrates* ; for which vide *Agel. l. 19.*  
*Not. Attic. c. 2.* And so of late  
time was *Paracelsus*, who did un-  
dertake to prescribe a way for the  
generation of a man without coiti-  
on. *Vide Campanel de sensu rerum,*  
*in Append. ad cap. 19. l. 4.* *Monsieur*  
*Montaignes* words on this subject, are

worth the reading ; these they are :  
 Je trouve après tout, que l'amour n'est  
 autre chose que la faim de cette  
 jouissance , & considerant maintes-  
 fois ridicule titillation de se plaiser  
 par ou il nous tient , les absurdes mo-  
 vements , escervelez & estourdis de  
 quoy il agit Zénon & Cratippus,  
 ceste rage indiscrete , ce visage in-  
 flammé de fureur & de cruauté au  
 plus doux effect de l'amour , & puis  
 cette morgue grave severe & extati-  
 que en une action si folle , & que la  
 supreme volupté aye du trainy &  
 du plaintiff comme la douleur , je  
 croye qu'on se joue de nous , & que  
 c'est par industrie que nature nous a  
 laissé la plus trouble de nos actions  
 les plus communes pour nous esgaller  
 par là & apparier les fols & les  
 sages : & nous & les bestes , le plus  
 contemplatif & prudent homme  
 quand je l'imagin en ceste assiette je  
 le tien pour un affronteur , de faire  
 le prudent & le contemplatif , ce sont  
 les pieds du paon qui abbattent son or-  
 gueil , nous mangeons bien & beu-  
 vons comme les bestes , mais ce ne sont

pas actions, qui empeschent les operations de nostro ame, en celles-la nous gradous nostre avantage sur elles : cettcey met tout autre pensee sans le joug abrutist & abesuit parson imperieuse authorité taute la Theology & Philosophy, qui est en Platon & si il ne sen plaint pas, par tout ailleurs vous pouvez garder quelque decence toutes autres operations souffrent des Regles d'honestete cettcey ne se peut seulement imaginer que vitieuse ou ridicule trouvezzy pourvoir un proceder sage & discret. Alexander disoit qu'il se cognossoit principalement mortel par cette action & par le dormir : le sommeil suffoque & supprime les facultez de nostre ame, la besoigne les absorbe & dissipe de mesme. Certes c'est une marque non seulement de nostre corruption originelle, mais aussi de nostre vanite & disformite. D'un coste nature nous y pousse ayant attache a ce desire la plus noble, utile & plaisante de toutes ses operations, & la nous laisse d'autre part accuser & fuyr romme insolent &



*disboneste, en rougir & cecommander l'abstinence, &c. Montaign liv. 3. chapit. 5.*

Sect. 10. *And may be inverted on the worst. ]*

Page. 159. That is, that there are none so abandoned to vice, but they have some sprinklings of vertue. There are scarce any so vitious, but commend virtue in those that are endued with it, and do some things laudable themselves, as *Plin.* saith in *Panegyric.* *Machiavel* upon *Livy*, lib. 1. cap. 27. sets down the ensuing relation as a notable confirmation of this truth. *Julius Pontifex, ejus nominis secundus, anno salutis 1505, Bononiam excercitus duxit, ut Bentivolorum familiam, qua ejus urbis imperium centum jam annos tenuerat, loco moveret. Eademque in expeditione etiam Johannem Paganum, Bagloneum tyrannum Perusinum sua sede expellere decreverat, ut ceteros item, qui urbes Ecclesia per vim tenerent. Ejus rei causa cum ad Perusinam urbem accessisset, & notum jam omnibus esset quid in animo haberet: tamen impatience*

tiencia moræ, noluit exercitus expectare, sed inermis quasi urbem ingressus est, in quam Johannes Pagolus defendendi sui causa, non exiguas copias contraxerat. Is autem eodem furore, quo res suas administrare solebat, unâ cum milite, cui custodiam sui corporis demandarat, sese in pontificis potestatem dedit, à quo abductus est relictusque alius, qui Ecclesie nomine urbem gubernaret. Hac ipsa in re magnopere admirati sunt viri sapientes, qui Pontificem comitabantur, cum Pontificis ipsius temeritatem, cum adjectum vilemque, Johannes Pagoli aximum: nec causam intelligebant, ob quam permotus idem Pagolus, hostem suum inermem (quod illi cum perpetua nominis sui memoria facere licebat) non subito oppresserit, & tam pretiosa spolia diripuerit; cum Pontifex urbem ingressus fuisset, Cardinalibus tantum suis stipatus, qui pretiosissimas quasque suarum rerum secum habebant. Neque enim credebatur Pagolus a tanto facinore vel sua bonitate,  
vel

*vel animi conscientia abstinuisse : quod in hominem sceleratum, qui & propria sorore utebatur, & consobrinos nepotesque dominandi causa è medio sustulerat hujusmodi pii affectus cadere non viderentur. Cum igitur hac de re varia essent sapientum virorum sententia ; concluserunt tandem id ei accidisse, quod ita comparatum sit, ut homines neque plane pravi esse queant, neque perfecte boni. Pravi perfecte esse nequeant, propterea quod, ubi tale quoddam scelus est, in quo aliquid magnifici ac generosi insit, id patrare non audeant. Nam cum Pagolus neq; incestum prius horruisset, neque patricidio abstinuisset : tamen cum oblata esset occasio, pravi quidem sed memorabilis, atque æterna memoria facinoris patrandi, id attentare non ausus fuit, cum id sine infamia prestare licuisset, quod rei magnitudo omnia priora scelera obtegere potuisset, & a periculo conservare. Quibus accedit, quod illi gratulati fuissent etiam quam plurimi, si primis ausus esset Pontificibus monstrare rationem*

*rationem dominandi ; totiusque humana vite usum ab illis nimis parvi pendit.*

*Poysons contain within themselves their own Antidote.* ] The Poyson of a Scorpion is not Poyson to it self, nor the Poyson of a Toad is not Poyson to it self ; so that the sucking out of Poyson from persons infected by Pysylls, ( who are continually nourished with venomous aliment ) without any prejudice to themselves, is the less to be wondred at.

*The man without a Navil yet lives in me.* ] The Latine Annotator hath explicated this by *Homo non perfectus*, by which it seems he did not comprehend the Author's meaning ; for the Author means *Adam*, and by a Metonymie original sin ; for the Navil being onely of use to attract the aliment *in utero materno*, and *Adam* having no mother, he had no use of a Navil, and therefore it is not to be conceived he had any ; and upon that ground the Author calls him the man without a Navil.

*Our*

Sect. II. Our grosser memories have then so  
 Pag. 125. little hold of our abstracted understandings, that they forget the story, and can onely relate to our awaked senses a confused and broken tale of that that hath pass'd.]

For the most part it is so. In regard of the Author's expression of forgetting the story, though otherwise it be not very pertinent to this place, I shall set down a relation given by an English Gentleman, of two dreams that he had, wherein he did not forget the story, but (what is more strange) found his dreams verified. This it is.

Whilst I lived at *Prague*, and one night had sit up very late drinking at a feast, early in the morning the Sun beams glancing on my face, as I lay in my bed, I dreamed that a shadow passing by told me that my Father was dead; at which awaking all in a sweat, and affected with this dream, I rose and wrote the day and hour, and all circumstances thereof in a Paper-book, which book with many other things I put into

a Barrel, and sent it from *Prague* to *Stode*, thence to be conveyed into *England*. And now being at *Nuremburgh*, a Merchant of a noble Family well acquainted with me and my friends, arrived there, who told me my Father dyed some two months ago. I list not to write any lyes, but that which I write, is as true as strange. When I returned into *England* some four years after, I would not open the Barrel I sent from *Prague*, nor look into the Paper-book in which I had written this dream, till I had called my Sisters and some friends to be witnesses, where my self and they were astonished to see my written dream answer the very day of my Father's death.

I may lawfully swear that which my Kinsman hath heard witnessed by my brother *Henry* whilst he lived, that in my youth at *Cambridge*, I had the like dream of my Mother's death, where my brother *Henry* living with me, early in the morning I dreamed that my Mother passed  
by



by with a sad countenance, and told me that she could not come to my Commencement: I being within five months to proceed Master of Arts, and she having promised at that time to come to *Cambridge*. And when I related this dream to my brother, both of us awaking together in a sweat, he protested to me that he had dreamed the very same; and when we had not the least knowledge of our Mothers sickness, neither in our youthful affections were any whit affected with the strangeness of this dream, yet the next Carrier brought us word of our Mothers death. Mr. *Fiennes Morison* in his Itinerary. I am not overcredulous of such relations, but methinks the circumstance of publishing it at such a time, when there were those living that might have disprov'd it, if it had been false, is a great argument of the truth of it.

Sect. 12. *I wonder the fancy of Lucan and*  
*Pag. 166. Seneca did not discover it. ] For*  
*they had both power from Nero to*  
*chuse their deaths. To*

To conceive our selves Urinals is Sect. 13.  
not so ridiculous. ] Reperti sunt Ga- Pag. 169.  
leno & Avicenna testibus qui se vasa  
fictilia crederent, idcirco homi-  
num attactum ne confringerentur so-  
llicite fugerent. Pontan. in Attic. bel-  
lar. (Hist. 22.) Which proceeds from  
extremity of melancholy.

Aristot. is too severe, that will not  
allow us to be truly liberal without  
wealth, ] Aristot. l. i. Ethic. c. 8.

Thy will be done though in mine Sect. 15.  
own undoing. ] This should be the Pag. 174.  
wish of every man, and is of the  
most wise and knowing. *Le Christien  
plus humble & plus sage & mieux re-  
cognoissant que c'est que de lay se rap-  
porte a son createur de choisir & or-  
donner ce qu' el luy faqt. Il ne le  
supplie dautre chose que sa volonte  
soit faite. Montaign.*

---

FINIS.

21 MAY

OBSERVATIONS  
UPON  
*Religio Medici.*

---

Occasionally Written  
By Sr. *Kenelm Digby*, Knight.

---

The fifth Edition,  
Corrected and Enlarged.

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed for *R. Scot, T. Bassett, J. Wright,*  
*R. Chiswell*, 1678.

# CONSERVATIONS

ON

THE HISTORY OF

THE ARTS AND MANUFACTURES

OF THE KINGDOM OF GREAT BRITAIN

IN THE YEAR 1789



## OBSERVATIONS

UPON

*Religio Medici.*


---

To the Right Honourable  
*Edward* Earl of *Dorset*, Baron  
 of *Buckhurst*, &c.

*My Lord,*

**I** Received yesternight, your Lordships of the nineteenth current, wherein you are pleased to oblige me, not onely by extream gallant Expressions of favour and kindness, but likewise by taking so far into your care the expending of my time, during the tediousness of my restraint, as to recommend to my reading a *Book*, that had received the honour and safeguard of your approbation; for both which I most

X 2

humbly



humbly thank your Lordship. And since I cannot in the way of gratefulness express unto your Lordship as I would, those hearty sentiments I have of your goodness to me ; I will at the last endeavour , in the way of *Duty* and *Observance* , to let you see how the little Needle of my Soul is thoroughly touched at the great Loadstone of yours, and followeth suddenly and strongly, which way soever you becken it. In this occasion , the Magnetick motion was impatient to have the *Book* in my hands, that your Lordship gave so advantageous a Character of, whereupon I sent presently (as late as it was) to *Paul's Church-yard* for this Favourite of yours , *Religio Medici* : which after a while found me in a condition fit to receive a Blessing by a visit from any of such Masterpieces, as you look upon with gracious eyes ; for I was newly gotten into my bed. This good-natur'd creature I could easily perswade to be my Bed-fellow, and to wake with me, as long as I had any edge to entertain

tain my self with the delights I sucked from so noble a conversation. And truly (my Lord) I closed not my eyes, till I had enricht my self with, or at least exactly surveyed all the treasures that are lapped up in the folds of those few sheets. To return onely a general commendation of this curious Piece, or at large to admire the Author's spirit and smartness, were too perfunctory an accompt, and too slight an one, to so discerning and stedy an eye as yours, after so particular and encharged a Summons to read heedfully this Discourse. I will therefore presume to blot a Sheet or two of Paper with my reflections upon sundry passages through the whole Context of it, as they shall occur to my remembrance. Which now your Lordship knoweth, this Packet is not so happy as to carry with it any one expression of my obsequiousness to you. It will be but reasonable, you should even here give over your further trouble of reading, what my respect ingageth me to the writing of.

Whose first step is ingenuity and a well-natur'd evenness of *Judgement*, shall be sure of applause and fair hopes in all men for the rest of his *Journey*. And indeed (my Lord) me thinketh this Gentleman setteth out excellently poised with that happy temper; and sheweth a great deal of *Judicious Piety* in making a right use of the blind zeal that *Bigots* loose themselves in. Yet I cannot satisfie my Doubts thoroughly, how he maketh good his professing to follow the great Wheel of the Church in matters of *Divinity*; which surely is the solid *Basis* of true Religion: for to do so, without jarring against the Conduct of the first Mover by Eccentricall and Irregular Motions, obligeth one to yield a very dutiful obedience to the determinations of it, without arrogating to ones self a controlling Ability in liking or misliking the Faith, Doctrine, and Constitutions of that *Church* which one looketh upon as their North-star: *Whereas*, if I mistake not, this Author approveth the Church of *England*, not absolutely, but comparatively

paratively with other Reformed Churches.

My next Reflexion is, concerning what he hath sprinkled (most wittily) in several places, concerning the Nature and Immortality of a humane Soul, and the Condition and State it is in, after the dissolution of the Body. And here give me leave to observe what our Country-man *Roger Bacon* did long ago; *That those Students, who busie themselves much with such Notions, as reside wholly to the fantasie, do hardly ever become Idoneous for abstracted Metaphysical Speculations; the one having bulkie Foundation of Matter, or of the Accidents of it, to settle upon, (at the least, with one foot:) The other flying continually, even to a lessening pitch in the subtil Air. And accordingly, it hath been generally noted, That the exactest Mathematicians, who converse altogether with Lines, Figures, and other Differences of Quantity, have seldom proved eminent in Metaphysicks, or Speculative Divinity. Nor again, the Professors of these Sciences in the other Arts. Much less*

can it be expected that an excellent Physician, whose fancy is alwayes fraught with the material Drugs that he prescribeth his Apothecary to compound his Medicines of, and whose hands are inured to the cutting up, and eyes to the inspection of Anatomized Bodies, should easily, and with success; flie his thoughts at so towring a Game, as a pure Intellect, a separated and unbodied Soul. Surely this acute Author's sharp wit, had he orderly applied his Studies that way, would have been able to satisfie himself with less labour, and others with more plenitude, than it hath been the Lot of so dull a brain as mine, concerning the *Immortality of the Soul*. And yet, I assure you (my Lord) the little *Philosophy* that is allowed me for my share, demonstrateth this Proposition to me, as well as Faith delivereth it; which our *Physician* will not admit in his.

To make good this Assertion here were very unreasonable, since that to do it exactly (and without exactness, it were not demonstration) requireth

quireth a total Survey of the whole Science of *Bodies*, and of all the operations that we are conversant with, of a rational Creature; which I having done with all the succinctness I have been able to explicate so knotty a subject with, hath taken me up in the first draught neer two hundred sheets of Paper. I shall therefore take leave of this Point, with only this Note, That I take the *Immortality of the Soul* (under his favour) to be of that nature, that to them onely that are not versed in the ways of proving it by Reason, it is an Article of Faith, to others, it is an evident Conclusion of demonstrative Science.

And with a like short Note, I shall observe, how if he had traced the Nature of the *Soul* from its first principles, he could not have suspected it should sleep in the Grave, till the *Resurrection* of the Body. Nor would he have permitted his compassionate Nature to imagin it belonged to God's mercy (as the *Chilists* did) to change its condition in



in those that are damned , from pain to happiness. For where God should have done that, he must have made that anguished Soul another creature than what it was ( as to make fire cease from being hot , requireth to have it become another thing than the *Element* of fire;) since that to be in such a condition , as maketh us understand damned souls miserable , is a necessary effect of the temper it is in, when it goeth out of the *Body*, and must necessarily (out of its Nature ) remain in , unvariably for all Eternity ; *Though*, for the Conceptions of the vulgar part of Mankind, ( who are not capable of such abstruse Notions ) it be styled ( and truly too ) the sentence and punishment of a severe Judge.

I am extreamly pleased with him, when he saith, There are not Impossibilities enough in *Religion* for an Active Faith: And no whit less, when in *Philosophy* he will not be satisfied with such naked terms, as in *Schools* use to be obtruded upon easie minds, when the Master's fingers

gers are not strong enough to untie the Knots propos'd unto them. I confess, when I enquire what Light (to use our Author's Example) is, I should be as well contented with his silence, as with his telling me it is *Actus perspicui*; unless he explicate clearly to me, what those words mean, which I find very few go about to do. Such meat they swallow whole, and eject it as entire. But were such things Scientifically and Methodically declared, they would be of extream Satisfaction and Delight. And that work taketh up the greatest part of my formerly-mentioned Treatise. For I endeavour to shew by a continued Progress, and not by Leaps, all the Motions of Nature; and unto them to fit intelligibly the terms used by her best Secretaries; whereby all wilde fantastick Qualities and Moods (introduced for refuges of Ignorance) are banished from Commerce.

In the next place (my *Lord*) I shall suspect that our Author hath not penetrated into the bottom of those Conceptions that deep Scholars

lars have taught us of *Eternity*; Me thinketh he taketh it for an infinite Extension of time, aed a never-ending Revolution of continual succession: which is no more like *Eternity*, than a gross Body is like a pure *Spirit*. Nay, such an Infinity of Revolutions, is demonstrable to be a Contradiction, and impossible. In the state of *Eternity* there is no Succession, no Change, no Variety. *Souls* or *Angels* in that condition, do not so much as change a thought. All things, notions and actions, that ever were, are, or shall be in any creature, are actually present to such an Intellect. And this (my *Lord*) I aver, not as deriving it from *Theology*, and having recourse to beatifick Vision, to make good my Tenet, (for so, onely glorified creatures should enjoy such immense knowledge) but out of the principles of *Nature* and *Reason*, and from thence shall demonstrate it to belong to the lowest *Soul* of the ignorantest wretch whilst he lived in this world, since damned in *Hell*. A bold undertaking, you will say. But I confidently

fidently engage my self to it. Upon this occasion occurreth also a great deal to be said of the nature of *Predestination* ( which by the short touches our Author giveth of it, I doubt he quite mistakes) and how it is an unalterable *Series* and *Chain of Causes* , producing *infallible* (and in respect of them, necessary) Effects. But that is too a large a *Theam* to unfold here ; too vast an *Ocean* to describe in the scant Map of a Letter. And therefore I will refer that to a fitter opportunity, fearing I have already too much trespassed upon your Lordship's patience ; but that indeed, I hope, you have not had enough to read thus far.

I am sure, my *Lord* , that you (who never forgot any thing which deserved a room in your memory) do remember how we are told, that *Abyssus abyssum invocat* ; so here our Author, from the Abyss of *Predestination*, falleth into that of the *Trinity of Persons* , consistent with the Indivisibility of the Divine Nature : And out of that (if I be not exceedingly deceived ) into a third  
of

of mistaking, when he goeth about to illustrate this admirable Mystery by a wild discourse of a *Trinity* in our *Souls*. The dint of Wit is not forcible enough to dissect such tough Matter; wherein all the obscure glimmering we gain of that inaccessible Light, cometh to us cloathed in the dark Weeds of Negations, and therefore little can we hope to meet with any positive Examples to parallel it withal.

I doubt, he also mistaketh, and imposeth upon the several *Schools*, when he intimateth, that they gain-say this visible worlds being but a Picture or Shadow of the Invisible and Intellectual: which manner of *Philosophizing* he attributeth to *Hermes Trismegistus*, but is every where to be met with in *Plato*: and is raised since to a greater height in the Christian Schools.

But I am sure he learned in no good School, nor sucked from any good *Philosophy* to give an actual Subsistence and Being to first Matter without a Form. He that will allow that a *Real Existence* in Nature is

as superficially tinged in *Mitaphysics*, as another would be in *Mathematicks*, that should allow the like to a Point, a Line, or a Superficies in Figures; These, in their strict Notions, are but Negations of further Extension, or but exact Terminations of that Quantity, which falleth under the Consideration of the Understanding in the present purpose, no real Entities in themselves: so likewise, the Notions of Matter, Form, Act, Power, Existence, and the like, that are with Truth considered by the Understanding, and have there each of them a distinct Entity, are nevertheless no where by themselves in Nature. They are terms which we must use in the Negotiations of our thoughts, if we will discourse consequently, and conclude knowingly. But then again, we must be very wary of attributing to things in their own Natures such Entities as we create in our Understandings, when we make Pictures of them there; for there every different consideration, arising out of the different



different impression which the same thing maketh upon us, hath a distinct Being by it self. Whereas in the thing there is but one single *Unity*, that sheweth (as it were in a Glass, at several positions ) those various faces in our understanding. In a word, all these words are but artificial terms, not real things. And the not right understanding of them, is the dangerouest Rock that *Scholars* suffer shipwrack against.

I go on with our *Physician's* Contemplations. Upon every occasion he sheweth strong parts, and a vigorous brain. His wishes and aims, and what he pointeth at, speak him owner of a noble and a generous heart. He hath reason to wish that *Aristotle* had been as accurate in examining the Causes, Nature and Affections of the great Universe he busied himself about, as his Patriarch *Galen* hath been in the like considerations upon this little *World*, Man's Body, in that admirable Work of his *De Usu Partium*. But no great humane thing was ever born and perfected at once. It may satisfie

us, if one in our age, buildeth that magnificent Structure upon the others foundations; and especially, if where he findeth any of them unsound, he eradicateth those, and fixeth new unquestionable ones in their room: But so, as they still, in gross, keep a proportion, and bear a *Harmony* with the other great Work. This hath now, (even now) our learned Countryman done; The knowing Mr. *White*, (whose name, I believe your Lordship hath met withal, in his excellent Book, *De Mundo*, newly printed at *Paris*, where he now resideth, and is admired by the World of Letter'd men there, as the *Prodigie* of these later times. Indeed his three *Dialogues* upon that Subject, (if I am able to judge any thing) are full of the profoundest Learning I ever yet met withal. And I believe, who hath well read & digested them, will perswade himself, there is no truth so abstruse, nor hitherto conceived out of our reach, but mans wit may raise Engines to scale and conquer. I assure my self, when our Author hath studied him thoroughly, he will

Y

not

not lament so loud for *Aristotles* mutilated and defective *Philosophy*, as in *Boccaline Caesar Caporali* doth for the loss of *Livies* shipwrecked *Decads*.

That *Logick* which he quarrelleth at, for calling a *Toad* or *Serpent* ugly, will in the end agree with his; for no body ever took them to be so, in respect of the *Universe*, in which regard he defendeth their *Regularity* and *Symmetry*) but onely as they have relation to us.

But I cannot so easily agree with him, where he affirmeth, that *Devils* or other *Spirits* in the Intellectual World, have no exact *Ephemerides*, wherein they may read before-hand the Stories of fortuite Accidents. For I believe, that all Causes are so immediately chained to their Effects, as if a perfect knowing Nature get hold but of one link, it will drive the entire *Series*, or Pedigree of the whole to its utmost end; (as I think I have proved in my fore-named Treatise) so that in truth there is no Fortuitness or Contingency of things

things, in respect of themselves, but only in respect of us, that are ignorant of their certain and necessary Causes.

Now a little *Series* or Chain and Complex of all outward Circumstances, (whose highest link, *Poets* say prettily is fasten'd to *Jupiter's* Chair, and the lowest is riveted to every Individual on Earth) steered and levelled by *God Almighty*, at the first setting out of the first Mover; I conceive, to be that *Divine Providence* and *Mercy*, which (to use our Author's own Example) giveth a thriving *Genius* to the *Hollanders*, and the like: And not any secret, invisible, mystical Blessing, that fall-eth not under the search or cognizance of a prudent indagation.

I must needs approve our Authors *Aequanimity*, and I may as justly say his *Magnanimity*, in being contented so cheerfully (as he saith) to shake hands with the fading *Goods* of *Fortune*, and be deprived of the joys of her most precious blessings; so that he may in recompence possess in ample measure the true ones

of the mind ; like *Epictetus* , that Master of moral Wisdom and Piety, who taxeth them of high injustice, that repine at Gods Distribution of his Blessings, when he putteth not into their share of goods, such things as they use no Industry or Means to purchase. For why should that man, who above all things esteemeth his own freedom, and who to enjoy that, sequestreth himself from commerce with the vulgar of mankind, take it ill of his *Stars*, if such Preferments, Honours, and Applauses meet not him, as are painfully gained, after long and tedious Services of *Princes*, and brittle Dependances of humorous Favourites , and supple Compliances with all sorts of Natures ? As for what he saith of *Astrologie* ; I do not conceive, that wise men reject it so much for being repugnant to *Divinity* ( which he reconcileth well enough ) as for having no solid Rules or ground in Nature. To rely too far upon that vain Art, I judge to be rather folly than impiety, unless in our censure we look to the first *Origine* of it ; which savoureth

vouresth of the Idolatry of those *Heathens*, that worshipping the *Stars* and heavenly Bodies for *Deities*, did in a superstitious Devotion, attribute unto them the Causality of all Effects beneath them. And for ought I know, the belief of solid *Orbs* in the Heavens, and their regularly-irregular Motions, sprung from the same root. And a like Inanity, I should suspect in *Chiromancy*, as well as *Astrologie*, (especially, in particular contingent Effects) however our *Author*, and no less a man than *Aristotle*, seem to attribute somewhat more to that conjectural Art of *Lines*.

I should much doubt (though our Author sheweth himself of another mind) that *Bernardinus Ochinus* grew at the last to be a meer *Atheist*: When after having been first the Institutor and *Patriarch* of the *Capucine-Order* (so violent was his Zeal then, as no former religious Institution, though never so rigorous, was strict enough for him) he from thence fell to be first an *Heretick*, then a *Jew*, and

This Story I have but upon relation, yet of a very good hand.



after a while became a *Turk*; and at the last wrote a furious *Invective* against those, whom he called the three *Grand Impostors* of the *World*; among whom he ranked our Saviour *Christ*, as well as *Moses* and *Mahomet*.

I doubt he mistakes, in his *Chronologie*, or the Printer in the name, when he maketh *Ptolemy* condemn the *Alchoran*.

He needeth not be so scrupulous, as he seemeth to be in averring down-rightly, That God cannot do contradictory things, (though peradventure it is not amiss to sweeten the manner of the expression, and the sound of the words) for who understandeth the nature of contradiction, will find *Non-Entity* in one of the terms, which of God were impiety not to deny peremptorily. For he being in his proper Nature *Self-Entity*, all *Being* must immediately flow from him, and all *Not-Being* be totally excluded from that Efflux. Now for the recalling of *Time* past, which the *Angels* posed *Esdra* with-  
al;

al; there is no contradiction in that, as is evident to them that know the essence of Time. For it is but putting again, all things that had motion, into the same state they were in, at that moment unto which time was to be reduced back, and from thence letting it travel on again by the same motion, and upon the same wheels it rouled upon before. And therefore God could do this admirable Work, though neither *Esdra*s, nor all the power of Creatures together could do it: And consequently it cannot in this Question be said, that he posed Mortality with what himself was not able to perform.

I acknowledge ingenuously, our *Physicians* experience hath the advantage of my *Philosophy*, in knowing there are Witches. Yet I am sure, I have no temptation to doubt of the *Deity*, nor have any unsatisfaction in believing there are *Spirits*. I do not see such a necessary conjunction between them, as that the supposition of the one must needs infer the other. Neither do I deny

there are Witches. I only reserve my Assent, till I meet with stronger motives to carry it. And I confess I doubt as much of the efficacy of those Magical Rules he speaketh of, as also of the finding out of Mysteries by the courteous *Revelation of Spirits*.

I doubt his Discourse of an *Universal Spirit*, is but a wild Fancy: and that in the marshalling of it, he mistaketh the *Hermetical Philosophers*. And surely, it is a weak argument, from a common nature, that subsisteth only in our understanding (out of which it hath no being at all) to infer by parity, an actual Subsistence, or the like, in reality of nature (of which kind of miscarriage in mens discoursings, I have spoken before.) And upon this occasion, I do not see how seasonably he falleth of a sudden from natural Speculations, to a Moral Contemplation of *Gods Spirit* working in us. In which also I would enquire (especially upon his sudden Poetical rapture) whether the Solidity

dity of the *Judgement* be not outweighed by the airiness of the Fancy. Assuredly one cannot err in taking this *Author* for a very fine ingenious *Gentleman* : But for how deep a *Scholar*, I leave unto them to judge, that are abler than I am.

If he had applied himself with earnest study, and upon right grounds, to search out the Nature of pure Intellects; I doubt not but his great Parts would have argued more efficaciously, than he doth against those, that between *Men* and *Angels*, put only *Porphyries* difference of *Mortality* and *Immortality*. And he would have dived further into the tenour of their Intellectual Operations; in which there is no Succession, nor ratiocinative Discourse; for in the very first instant of their Creation, they actually knew all that they were capable of knowing, and they are acquainted even with all free thoughts, past, present, and to come; for they see them in their causes, and they see them all together at one instant; as I have in my fore-mentioned

ned Treatise proved at *large*: And I think I have already touch'd thus much once before in this *Letter*.

I am tempted here to say a great deal concerning *Light*, by his taking it to be a bare Quality. For in *Phy-sicks*, no Speculation is more useful, or reacheth further. But to set down such *Phænomena's* of it, as I have observed, and from whence I evidently collect the Nature of it, were too large a *Theam* for this place: When your Lordship pleaseth, I shall shew you another more orderly Discourse upon that Subject; wherein I have sufficiently proved it to be a solid Substance and Body.

In his proceeding to collect an Intellectual World, and in his discoursing upon the place and habitation of *Angels*; as also in his consideration of the activity of glorified Eyes, which shall be in the state of rest, whereas motion is required to seeing; and in his subtil Speculation upon two Bodies, placed in the Vacuity, beyond the utmost all-enclosing Superficie of *Heaven* (which implieth

implieth a Contradiction in Nature) methinks I hear *Apelles* cry out, *Ne sutor ultra Crepidam*; or rather, it putteth me in mind of one of the Titles in *Pantagruels* Library, (which he expresseth himself conversant in) namely, *Quaestio subtilissima, utrum Chimæra in vacuo bombinans possit comedere Secundas intentiones*; with which short Note I will leave these Considerations; in which (if time, and other circumstances allowed it) matter would spring up of excellent *Learning*.

When our Author shall have read Mr. *Whites* Dialogue of the *World*, he will no longer be of the Opinion, That the Unity of the world is a conclusion of Faith: For it is there demonstrated by *Reason*.

Here the thread of the Discourse inviteth me to say a great deal of the Production or Creation of *Mans Soul*. But it is too tedious, and too knotty a piece for a *Letter*. Now it shall suffice to note, that it is not *Ex traduce*, and yet hath a strange kind



kind of near dependance of the Body, which is, as it were, Gods instrument to create it by. This, thus said, or rather tumbled out, may seem harsh. But had your Lordship leisure to peruse what I have written at full upon this Point, I doubt not but it would appear plausible enough to you.

I cannot agree with him, when he seemeth to impute Inconvenience to *long Life*, and that length of time doth rather impair, than improve us: For surely, if we will follow the course of Nature, and of Reason, it is a mighty great blessing; were it but in this regard, that it giveth time leave to vent and boyl away the unquietnesses and turbulencies that follow our passions, and to wean our selves gently from carnal affections, and at the last to drop with ease and willingness, like ripe fruit from the *Tree*; as I remember *Plotinus* finely discourseth in one of his *Eneads*. For when before the Season, it is plucked off with violent hands, or shaken down by rude and boysterous winds,

it

it carrieth along with it an indigested raw tast of the Wood, and hath an unpleasant aigerness in its juyce, that maketh it unfit for use, till long time hath mellowed it: And peradventure it may be so backward, as in stead of ripening, it may grow rotten in the very *Center*. In like manner, *Souls* that go out of their *Bodies* with affection to those *Objects* they leave behind them, ( which usually is as long as they can relish them ) do retain still even in their Separation, a byas, and a languishing towards them: which is the *Reason* why such terrene *Souls* appear ofteneft in *Cæmeteries* and *Charnel-houses*, and not that moral one, which our Author giveth. For Life, which is union with the body, being that which carnal souls have straightest affection to, and that they are loatheft to be separated from; their unquiet *Spirit*, which can never ( naturally ) lose the impressions it had wrought in it at the time of its driving out, lingereth perpetually after that dear Consort of his. The impossibility

impossibility cannot cure them of their impotent desires; they would fain be alive again,

———— *Iteramque ad trada reverti  
Corpora. Quæ lucis miseris tam  
dira cupido.*

And to this cause peradventure may be reduced the strange effect, which is frequently seen in *England*, when at the approach of the *Murderer*, the slain body suddenly bleedeth afresh. For certainly, the Souls of them that are treacherously murdered by surprize, use to leave their bodies with extream unwillingness, and with vehement indignation against them, that force them to so unprovided and abhorred a passage. That Soul then, to wreak its evil talent against the hated Murderer, and to draw a just and desired revenge upon his head, would do all it can to manifest the author of the fact. To speak, it cannot, for in it self it wanteth *Organs* of voice; and those it is parted from, are now grown

grown too heavy, and are too benumbed for it to give motion unto. Yet some change it desireth to make in the body, which it hath so vehement inclinations to, and therefore is the aptest for it to work upon: It must then endeavour to cause a motion in the subtilest and most fluid parts (and consequently, the most moveable ones) of it. This can be nothing but the Bloud, which then being violently moved, must needs gush out at those places where it findeth issues.

Our Author cannot believe, that the world will perish upon the ruines of its own principles. But Mr. *White* hath demonstrated the end of it upon natural Reason. And though the precise time for that general Destruction be inscrutable; yet he learnedly sheweth an ingenious Rule, whereby to measure in some sort the duration of it, without being branded (as our Author threatneth) with convincible and *Statute*-madness, or with impiety. And whereas he will have the work of this last  
great

great Day (the Summer up of all past days) to imply annihilation and thereupon interesteth God only in it: I must beg leave to contradict him, namely in this Point; and to affirm, that the letting loose then of the activest Element, to destroy this face of the World, will but beget a change in it; and that no annihilation can proceed from God Almighty: For his Essence being (as I said before) self-existence, it is more impossible that Not-being should flow from him, than that cold should flow immediately from fire, or darkness from the actual presence of light.

I must needs acknowledge, that where he ballanceth Life and Death against one another, and considereth that the later is to be a kind of nothing for a moment, to become a pure *Spirit* within one instant, and what followeth of this strong thought, is extream handsomely said, and argueth very gallant and generous Resolutions in him.

To exemplifie the *Immortality* of the *Soul*, he needeth not have recourse to the *Philosophers-stone*. His own store furnisheth him with a most pregnant one of reviving a Plant (the same numerical Plant) out of his own ashes. But under his favour, I believe his experiment will fail, if under the notion of the same, he comprehendeth all the Accidents that first accompanied that Plant; for since in the ashes there remaineth onely the fixed Salt, I am very confident, that all the Colour, and much of the Odour and Taste of it, is flown away with the Volatile Salt.

What should I say of his making so particular a Narration of personal things, and private thoughts of his own; the knowledge whereof cannot much conduce to any mans betterment? (which I make account is the chief end of his writing this Discourse.) As where he speaketh of the soundness of his Body, of the course of his Diet, of the coolness of his Bloud at the Summer-Solstice



of his age, of his neglect of an *Epitaph*; how long he hath lived, or may live; what *Popes*, *Emperours*, *Kings*, *Grand-Seigniors*, he hath been Contemporary unto, and the like: Would it not be thought that he hath a special good opinion of himself, (and indeed he hath reason) when he maketh such great Princes the Landmarks in the Chronology of himself? Surely, if he were to write by retale the particulars of his own Story and Life, it would be a notable *Romance*, since he telleth us in one total Sum, it is a continued Miracle of thirty years. Though he creepeth gently upon us at the first, yet he groweth a *Gyant*, an *Atlas* (to use his own expression) at the last. But I will not censure him, as he that made Notes upon *Balsac's* Letters, and was angry with him for vexing his Readers with Stories of his *Cholicks*, and voiding of Gravel. I leave this kind of expressions, without looking further into them.

In the next place (my *Lord*) I shall

shall take occasion from our Authors setting so main a difference between moral Honesty and Vertue, or being vertuous (to use his own phrase) out of an inbred loyalty to Vertue ; and on the other side, being vertuous for a rewards sake ; to discourse a little concerning *Vertue* in this life, and the effects of it afterwards. Truly ( my *Lord* ) however he seemeth to prefer this later, I cannot but value the other much before it, if we regard the nobleness and heroickness of the nature and mind from whence they both proceed : And if we consider the Journeys end, to which each of them carrieth us, I am confident the first yieldeth nothing to the second, but indeed both meet in the period of Beatitude. To clear this point ( which is very well worth the wisest mans seriousst thought ) we must consider, what it is that bringeth us to this excellent State , to be happy in the other world of Eternity and Immutability. It is agreed on all hands to be Gods Grace and Favour to us : But

all do not agree by what steps his Grace produceth this effect. Herein I shall not trouble your Lordship with a long Discourse, how that Grace worketh in us, (which yet I will in a word touch anon, that you may conceive what I understand Grace to be) but will suppose it to have wrought its effect in us in this life, and from thence examine what hinges they are that turn us over to *Beatitude* and *Glory* in the next: Some consider God as a Judge, that rewardeth or punisheth men, according as they co-operated with, or repugned to, the Grace he gave. That according as their actions please or displease him, he is well affected towards them, or angry with them, and accordingly maketh them, to the purpose, and very home, feel the effects of his kindness or indignation. Others that fly a higher pitch, and are so happy,

— *Ut rerum poterint cognoscere causas,*

do conceive that Beatitude and misery in the other life, are effects that necessarily and orderly flow out of the Nature of those Causes that begot them in this life, without engaging God Almighty to give a sentence, and act the part of a Judge, according to the state of our Cause, as it shall appear upon the Accusations and pleadings at his great *Bar*. Much of which manner of expression, is Metaphorical, and rather adapted to contain vulgar minds in their Duties (that are awed with the thought of a severe Judge, sitting every minute-action of theirs) than such as we must conceive every circumstance to pass so in reality, as the literal sound of the words seems to infer in ordinary construction: and yet all that is true too, in its genuine sense.) But, my *Lord*, these more penetrating men, and that, I conceive, are vertuous upon higher and stronger Motives (for they truly and solidly know, why they are so) do consider, that what impres-

Z 3

sions

sions are once made in the spiritual Substance of a Soul, and what affections it hath once contracted, do ever remain in it, till a contrary and diametrically contradicting judgement and affection, do obliterate it, and expel it thence. This is the reason why *Contrition*, *Sorrow*, and *Hatred* for *Sins* past, is enjoined us. If then the *Soul* do go out of the *Body* with impressions and affections to the *Objects* and pleasures of this life, it continually lingreth after them; and as *Virgil* (learnedly, as well as wittily) saith,

— *Qua gratia currum,  
Armorumque fuit vivis, qua cuncta  
nitentes  
Pascere equos, eadem sequitur tel-  
lure repostos.*

But that being a State wherein those *Objects* neither are, nor can be enjoyed, it must needs follow that such a *Soul* must be in an exceeding anguish, sorrow and affliction,

tion, for being deprived of them ; and for want of that it so much prizeth, will neglect all other contentments it might have, as not having a relish or taste moulded and prepared to the favouring of them ; but like feavorish tongues , that when they are even scorched with heat, take no delight in the pleasingest liquors, but the sweetest drinks seem bitter to them, by reason of their overflowing Gall : So they even hate whatsoever good is in their power , and thus pine away a long Eternity. In which the sharpness and activity of their pain, anguish, and sad condition, is to be measured by the sensibleness of their Natures : which being then spiritual, is in a manner infinitely more than any torment that in this life can be inflicted upon a dull gross body. To this add, the vexation it must be to them, to see how inestimable and infinite a good they have lost ; and lost meerly by their own fault , and for momentary trifles , and childrens play ;



and that it was so easie for them to have gained it, had they remained but in their right senses, and governed themselves according unto *Reason*. And then judge in what a tortured condition they must be, of remorse and execrating themselves for their most resupine and senseless madness. But if on the other side, a Soul be released out of this *Prison* of clay and flesh, with affections settled upon Intellectual goods, as *Truth*, *Knowledge*, and the like; and that it be grown to an irksome dislike of the flat pleasures of this World; and look upon carnal and sensual Objects with a disdainful eye, as discerning the contemptible Inanity in them, that is set off only by their painted outside; and above all, that it hath a longing desire to be in the Society of that supereminent Cause of Causes, in which they know are heaped up the *Treasures* of all *Beauty*, *Knowledge*, *Truth*, *Delight*, and good whatsoever; and therefore

fore are impatient at the *Delay*, and reckon all their Absence from him as a tedious Banishment; and in that regard hate their Life and Body, as Cause of this Divorce: such a Soul, I say, must necessarily, by reason of the temper it is wrought into, enjoy immediately at the instant of the Bodies dissolution, and its liberty, more Contentment, more Joy, more true Happiness, than it is possible for a heart of flesh to have scarce any scantling of, much less to comprehend.

For immense Knowledge is natural to it, as I have touched before. *Truth*, which is the adequated and satisfying Object of the Understanding, is there displayed in her own Colours, or rather without any.

And that which is the *Crown* of all, and in respect of which all the rest is nothing; that infinite Entity, which above all things this Soul thirsteth to be united unto, cannot for his own Goodness sake, deny his Embraces to so affectionate a  
*Creature,*

*Creature*, and to such an enflamed Love. If he should, then were that Soul, for being the best, and for loving him most, condemned to be the unhappiest. For what Joy could she have in any thing, were she barred from what she so infinitely loveth? But since the Nature of superiour and excellent things is to shower down their propitious Influences, wheresoever there is a Capacity of receiving them, and no Obstacle to keep them out (like the Sun that illuminateth the whole Air, if no Cloud, or solid opacous Body intervene) it followeth clearly, that this infinite Sun of Justice, this immense Ocean of Goodness, cannot chuse but environ with his Beams, and replenish even beyond satiety with his delightful Waters, a soul so prepared and tempered to receive them.

*Now* ( my *Lord* ) to make use of this Discourse, and apply it to what begot it; be pleased to determine, which way will deliver us evenest and smoothest to this happy end  
of

of our *Journey* : To be vertuous for hope of a Reward, and through fear of Punishment ; or to be so out of a natural and inward affection to *Vertue*, for *Vertues* and *Reasons* sake? Surely one in this latter condition , not onely doth those things which will bring him to *Beatitude* ; but he is so secured, in a manner, under an Armour of *Proof*, that he is almost invulnerable ; he can scarce miscarry , he hath not so much as an inclination to work contrarily ; the Alluring Baits of this *World* tempt him not ; he disliketh, he hateth, even his necessary Commerce with them whilst he liveth. On the other side, the Hireling that steereth his course by his Reward and Punishment , doth well , I confess ; but he doth it with Reluctance ; he carrieth the *Ark*, Gods Image, his Soul, safely home , it is true, but he loweth pitifully after his Calves, that he leaveth behind him among the *Philistines*. In a word, he is *vertuous* ; but if he might safely

safely, he would do *vicious* things. ( And hence be the ground in Nature, if so I might say, of our *Purgatory*.) Methinks two such minds may not unfitly be compared to two Maids, whereof one hath a little sprinkling of the Green sickness, and hath more mind to *Asbes*, *Chalk* or *Leather*, than meats of solid and good nourishment, but forbeareth them, knowing the languishing condition of *Health* it will bring her to: But the other having a ruddy, vigorous and perfect Constitution, and enjoying a compleat, entire *Encrasie*, delights in no food but of good nouriture, and loaths the other Delights. *Her Health* is discovered in her looks, and she is secure from any danger of that Malady, whereas the other for all her good Diet, beareth in her Complexion some sickly Testimony of her depraved Appetite; and if she be not very *wary*, she is in danger of a relapse.

It falleth fit in this place to examine our Authors apprehension of the

the end of such honest *Worthies* and *Philosophers* ( as he calleth them ) that died before *Christ* his Incarnation, Whether any of them could be saved, or no ? Truly, my *Lord*, I make no doubt at all, but if any followed in the whole *Tenor* of their lives, the Dictamens of right *Reason*, but that their journey was secure to *Heaven*. Out of the former Discourse appeareth what temper of mind is necessary to get thither. And, that *Reason* would dictate such a temper to a perfectly judicious man, ( though but in the state of *Nature* ) as the best and most rational for him, I make no doubt at all. But it is most true, they are exceeding few ( if any ) in whom *Reason* worketh clearly, and is not overswayed by *Passion* and terrene *Affections* ; they are few that can discern what is reasonable to be done in every Circumstance.

—— *Pauci, quos equus amavit*

*Ju-*



*Jupiter, aut ardens exivit ad aethera  
 virtus,  
 Diis geniti, potuere.——*

And fewer, that knowing what is best, can win of themselves to do accordingly ; ( *Video meliora proboque, deteriora sequor*, being most mens cases ) so that after all that can be expected at the hands of Nature and Reason in their best Habit, since the lapse of them, we may conclude it would have been a most difficult thing for any man, and a most impossible one for mankind, to attain unto *Beatitude*, if *Christ* had not come to teach, and by his example to shew us the way.

And this was the *Reason* of his Incarnation, teaching Life and Death : For being God, we could not doubt his Veracity, when he told us news of the other world ; having all things in his Power, and yet enjoying none of the Delights of this Life, no man should stick at foregoing them,  
 since

since his Example sheweth all men, that such a course is best ; whereas few are capable of the *Reason* of it : And for his last Act , dying in such an afflicted manner ; he taught us how the securest way to step immediately into Perfect Happiness , is to be crucified to all the Desires, Delights and Contentments of this *World*.

But to come back to our *Physician* : Truly ( my *Lord* ) I must needs pay him, as a due, the acknowledging his pious Discourses to be Excellent and Pathetical ones, containing worthy Motives, to incite one to Vertue , and to deter one from Vice ; thereby to gain *Heaven* , and to avoid *Hell*. Assuredly he is owner of a solid Head , and of a strong generous Heart. Where he imployeth his thoughts upon such things, as resort to no higher, or more abstruse *Principles* , than such as occur in ordinary Conversation with the World , or in the common Tract of Study and Learning ; I know

no man would say better. But when he meeteth with such difficulties as his next, concerning the *Resurrection of the Body*, (wherein after deep Meditation, upon the most abstracted Principles and Speculations of the *Metaphisicks*, one hath much ado to solve the appearing Contradictions in *Nature*) There, I do not at all wonder, he should tread a little awry, and go astray in the dark: for I conceive his course of life hath not permitted him to allow much time unto the unwinding of such entangled and abstracted Subtilties. But if it had, I believe his Natural parts are such, as he might have kept the Chair from most men I know: For even where he roveh widest, it is with so much wit and sharpness, as putteth me in mind of a great mans Censure upon *Joseph Scaligers Cyclometrica*, (a matter he was not well versed in) That he had rather err so ingeniously as he did, than hit upon *Truth* in that heavy manner, as the *Jesuit* his

his *Antagonist* stuffeth his *Books*. Most assuredly his wit and smartness in this Discourse, is of the finest *Standard*, and his insight into severer *Learning*, will appear as piercing unto such as use not strictly the *Touchstone* and the *Test*, to examine every peece of the glittering *Coyne*; he payeth his Reader with. But to come to the *Reformation*. Methinks it is but a gross Conception; to think that every *Atome* of the present individual Matter of a Body; every grain of *Albes* of a burned *Cadaver*, scattered by the Wind throughout the World, and after numerous Variations, changed peradventure into the Body of another man, should at the sounding of the last *Trumpet* be raked together again from all the corners of the Earth, and be made up anew into the same *Body* it was before of the first Man. Yet if we will be *Christians*, and rely upon Gods Promises, we must believe that we shall rise again with the

A a

same

same Body that walked about, did eat, drink, and live here on Earth; and that we shall see our *Saviour* and *Redeemer*, with the same, the very same eyes, wherewith we now look upon the fading *Glories* of this contemptible world.

How shall these seeming Contrarieties be reconciled? If the latter be true, why should not the former be admitted? To explicate this Riddle the better, give me leave to ask your Lordship, if your Lordship, if you now see the *Cannons*, the *Ensigns*, the *Arms*, and other Martial Preparations at *Oxford*, with the same Eyes, wherewith many years agoe you looked upon *Porphyrie's* and *Aristotle's* Leases there? I doubt not but you will answer me, Assuredly with the very same. Is that *Noble* and *Graceful Person* of yours, that begetteth both *Delight* and *Reverence* in every one that looketh upon it? Is that Body of yours, that now is grown to such comely and full Dimensions, as

*Nature*

*Nature* can give her none more advantageous ; the same Person, the same Body, which your Vertuous and Excellent Mother bore nine Months in her Chaste and Honoured Womb, and that your Nurse gave suck unto ? Most certainly it is the same. And yet if you consider it well, it cannot be doubted, but that sublunary matter, being in a perpetual flux, and in bodies which have internal Principles of *Heat* and Motion, much continually transpiring out to make room for the supply of new Aliment ; at the length, in long process of time, all is so changed, as that *Ship at Athens* may as well be called the same Ship that was there two hundred years before, and whereof ( by reason of the continual reparations ) not one foot of the *Timber* is remaining in her that builded her at the first, as this *Body* now can be called the same it was forty years ago, unless some higher consideration keep up the *Identity* of it. Now what that is, let us



examine, and whether or no it will reach to our difficulty of the *Resurrection*. Let us consider then, how that which giveth the Numerical Individuation to a *Body*, is the Substantial Form. As long as that remaineth the same, though the Matter be in a continual Flux and Motion, yet the Thing is still the same. There is not one drop of the same Water in the *Thames*, that ran down by *White-hall* yesternight; yet no man will deny, but that is the same River that was in Queen *Elizabeth's* time, as long as it is supplied from the same Common Stock, the *Sea*. Though this Example reacheth not home, it illustrateth the thing. If then the Form remain absolutely the same after separation from the Matter, that it was in the Matter, ( which can happen only to Forms, that subsist by themselves, as humane *Souls* ) it followeth then, That whensoever it is united to Matter again, ( all Matter coming out of the same Common Magazine ) it maketh

maketh again the same Man, with the same Eyes, and all the same Limbs that were formerly. Nay, he is composed of the same Individual Matter; for it hath the same Distinguisher and Individuator, to wit, the same Form or *Soul*. Matter considered singly by it self, hath no Distinction: All Matter is in it self the same; we must fancy it, as we do the indigested *Chaos*; it is a uniformly wide *Ocean*. Particularize a few drops of the *Sea*, by filling a Glass-full of them, then that Glass-full is distinguished from all the rest of the watery *Bulk*: But return back those few drops to from whence they were taken, and the Glass-full that even now had an Individuation by it self, loseth that, and groweth one and the same with the other main Stock: Yet if you fill your Glass again, wheresoever you take it up, so it be of the same Uniform *Bulk* of Water you had before, it is the same Glass-full of Water that you had. But as I said before, this Ex-

ample fitteth entirely, no more than the other did. In such abstracted Speculations, where we must consider Matter without Form (which hath no actual Being) we must not expect adequated Examples in Nature. But enough is said to make a Speculative man see, that if *God* should joyn the *Soul* of a lately dead man, (even whilst his dead Corpse should lye entire in his winding-sheet here) unto a *Body* made of Earth, taken from some Mountain in *America*; it were most true and certain, that the *Body* he should then lye by, were the same Identical *Body* he lived with before his *Death*, and late *Resurrection*. It is evident, that *Sameness*, *Thisness*, and *Thatness*, belongeth not to Matter by it self, (for a general Indifference runneth through it all) but onely as it is distinguished and individuated by the Form. Which, in our case, whensoever the same *Soul* doth, it must be understood always to be the same Matter and *Body*.

This

This Point thus passed over, I may preece to it what our *Author* saith, of a *Magazine* of Subsistent Forms, residing first in the *Chaos*, and hereafter (when the World shall have been destroyed by fire) in the general heap of *Asbes*: out of which Gods Voice did, and shall draw them out, and clothe them with Matter. This Language were handsome for a *Poet*, or *Rhetorician* to speak; but in a *Philosopher*, that should ratiocinate strictly and rigorously, I cannot admit it. For certainly, there are no Subsistent Forms of *Corporeal* things; (excepting the *Soul* of man, which besides being an Informing Form, hath another particular Consideration belonging to it, too long to speak of here.) But whensoever that Compound is destroyed, the Form perisheth with the whole. And for the Natural Production of *Corporeal* things, I conceive it to be wrought out by the Action and Passion of the *Elements* among themselves; which

introducing new Tempers and Dispositions, into the Bodies where these Conflicts pass; new Forms succeed old ones, when the Dispositions are raised to such a height, as can no longer consist with the preceding Form, and are in the immediate Degree to fit the succeeding one, which they usher in. The Mystery of all, which I have at large unfolded in my above-mentioned Treatise of the *Immortality of the Soul*.

I shall say no more to the first Part of our *Physicians* Discourse, after I have observed, how his Consequence is no good one; where he inferreth, That if the *Devils* fore-knew, who would be Damned or Saved, it would save them the *Labour*, and end their work of tempting Mankind to mischief and evil. For whatsoever their Moral Design and Success be in it, their Nature impelleth them to be always doing it. For on the one side, it is Active in the highest Degree, (as being pure *Acts*, that is,  
*Spirits*,

*Spirits*,) so on the other side, they are Malign in as great an Excess: By the one they must be always working, wheresoever they may work, (like Water in a Vessel full of holes, that will run out of every one of them which is not stopped;) By the other, their whole Work must be malicious and mischievous. Joyning then both these Qualities together, it is evident, they will always be tempting mankind, though they know they shall be frustrate of their Moral End.

But were it not time that I made an end? Yes, it is more than time. And therefore having once passed the limit that confined what was becoming, the next step carried me into the *Ocean of Error*; which being Infinite, and therefore more or less bearing no proportion in it; I will proceed a little further, to take a short Survey of his *Second Part*, and hope for as easie *Pardon* after this Addition, to my sudden and indigested Remarks,



marks, as if I had enclosed them up now.

*Metinks*, he beginneth with somewhat an affected Discourse, to prove his natural Inclination to *Charity*; which *Vertue* is the intended *Theam* of all the Remainder of his Discourse. And I doubt he mistaketh the lowest *Orbe* or *Lembe* of that high *Seraphick Vertue*, for the top and perfection of it; and maketh a kind of humane Compassion to be *Divine Charity*. He will have it to be a general way of doing good: It is true, he addeth then, *for Gods sake*; but he allayeth that again, with saying, he will have that good done, as by Obedience, and to accomplish Gods will; and looketh at the Effects it worketh upon our Souls, but in a narrow compass; like one in the vulgar throng, that considereth God as a Judge, and as a Rewarder or a Punisher. *Whereas* perfect *Charity*, is that vehement Love of God for his own sake, for his Goodness, for his Beauty, for his

his Excellency, that carrieth all the motions of our Soul directly and violently to Him ; and maketh a man disdain, or rather hate all obstacles that may retard his journey to Him. And that Face of it that looketh toward Mankind with whom we live, and warmeth us to do others good , is but like the over-flowing of the main Stream, that swelling above its Banks runneth over in a multitude of little channels.

I am not satisfied , that in the Likeness which he putteth between *God* and *Man* , he maketh the difference between them , to be but such as between two Creatures that resemble one another. For between these, there is some proportion ; but between the others, none at all. In the examining of which Discourse, wherein the *Author* observeth, that no two Faces are ever seen to be perfectly alike ; nay, no two *Pictures* of the same Face , were exactly made so ; I could take occasion to insert a  
subtil

subtil and delightful Demonstration of Mr. *Whites* , wherein he sheweth, how it is impossible that two Bodies (for example, two *Bouls*) should ever be made exactly like one another ; nay, not rigorously equal in any one Accident, as namely in weight, but that still there will be some little difference and inequality between them (the *Reason* of which Observation, our *Author* medled not with ) were it not that I have been so long already, as Digressions were now very unseasonable.

Shall I commend or censure our *Author* for believing so well of his acquired knowledge , as to be dejected at the thought of not being able to leave it a Legacy among his Friends ? Or shall I examine, whether it be not a high injury to wise and gallant *Princes*, who out of the generousness and nobleness of their *Nature*, do patronize Arts and learned Men , to impute their so doing to vanity of desiring

desiring Praise , or to fear of Re-  
proach ?

But let these pass : I will not  
engage any that may be-friend  
him, in a quarrel against him. But  
I may safely produce *Epictetus* to  
contradict him , when he letteth  
his kindness engulf him in deep  
afflictions for a friend : For he will  
not allow his wise man to have an  
inward relenting , a troubled feel-  
ing , or compassion of anothers  
misfortunes. That disordereth the  
one , without any good to the  
other. Let him afford all the assi-  
stances and relievings in his power,  
but without intermingling himself  
in others *Woe* ; As *Angels*, that do  
us good , but have no passion for  
us. But this Gentlemans kind-  
ness goeth yet further ; he com-  
pareth his love of a *Friend* to his  
love of *God* ; the Union of Friends  
Souls by affection , to the Union  
of the three Persons in the *Trinity*,  
and to the *Hypostatical Union* of  
two Natures in one *Christ*, by the  
Words *Incarnation*. Most cer-  
tainly

tainly he expresseth himself to be a right good-natur'd man. But if St. *Augustine* retracted so severely his pathetical Expressions for the Death of his Friend, saying, *They savoured more of the Rhetorical Declamations of a young Orator, than of the grave Confession of a devout Christian,* (or somewhat to that purpose) What censure upon himself may we expect of our *Physician*, if ever he make any Retraction of this Discourse concerning his *Religion*?

It is no small misfortune to him, that after so much time spent, and so many places visited in a curious Search, by travelling after the Acquisition of so many Languages; after the wading so deep in Sciences, as appeareth by the ample Inventory, and Particular he maketh of himself: The result of all this should be, to profess ingenuously he had studied enough, onely to become a *Sceptick*; and that having run through all sorts of *Learning*, he could find rest and

and satisfaction in none. This, I confess, is the unlucky fate of those that light upon wrong *Principles*. But Mr. *White* teacheth us, how the *Theorems* and *Demonstrations* of *Physicks* may be linked and chained together, as strongly, and as continuedly, as they are in the *Mathematicks*, if men would but apply themselves to a right Method of Study. And I do not find that *Solomon* complained of Ignorance in the height of Knowledge; (as this *Gentleman* saith) but onely, that after he hath rather acknowledged, himself ignorant of nothing, but that he understood the Natures of all Plants, from the *Cedar* to the *Hyssop*, and was acquainted with all the ways and paths of Wisdom and Knowledge; he exclaimeth, that all this is but *Toyl and vexation of spirit*; and therefore adviseth men, to change Humane Studies into Divine Contemplations and Affections.



I cannot agree to his resolution of shutting his *Books*, and giving over the search of Knowledge, and resigning himself up to Ignorance, upon the reason that moveth him; as though it were extream *Vanity* to waste our days in the pursuit of that, which by attending but a little longer (till Death hath closed the eyes of our *Body*, to open those of our *Soul*) we shall gain with ease, we shall enjoy by infusion, and is an accessory of our Glorification. It is true, as soon as *Death* hath played the Midwife to our second Birth, our Soul shall then see all Truths more freely, than our Corporal Eyes at our first Birth see all Bodies and Colours, by the natural power of it, as I have touched already, and not onely upon the grounds our *Author* giveth. Yet far be it from us, to think that time lost, which in the mean season we shall laboriously employ, to warm our selves with blowing a few little *Sparks* of that glorious fire, which we shall afterwards

wards in one instant leap into the middle of , without danger of Scorching. And that for two important *Reasons* ; besides several others, too long to mention here ) the one , for the great advantage we have by Learning in this life ; the other , for the huge Contentment that the Acquisition of it here (which applyeth a strong Affection it ) will be unto us in the next life. The want of Knowledge in our first Mother ( which exposed her to be easily deceived by the *Serpents* cunning ) was the root of all our ensuing *Misery* and *Woe*. It is as true (which we are taught by irrefragable Authority ) That *Omnis peccans ignorat* : And the well-head of all the calamities and mischiefs in all the World, consisteth of the troubled and bitter waters of Ignorance, Folly and Rashness; to cure which, the onely Remedy and Antidote, is the Salt of true *Learning* , the bitter *Wood* of *Study* , painful *Meditation* , and orderly *Consideration*.

B b

ration. I do not mean such Study, as armeth wrangling *Champions* for clamorous *Schools*, where the Ability of subtil *Disputing* to and fro, is more prized than the retrieving of Truth: But such as filleth the mind with solid and useful notions, and doth not endanger the swelling it up with windy vanities. Besides, the sweetest Companion and entertainment of a well-tempered mind, is to converse familiarly with the naked and bewitching beauties of those *Mistresses*, those *Verities* and *Sciences*, which by fair courting of them, they gain and enjoy, and every day bring new fresh ones to their *Seraglio*, where the ancientest never grow old or stale. Is there any thing so pleasing, or so profitable as this?

*Nil dulcius est, benequam*

*munita tenera*

*Edita doctrina sapientum, templa*  
*serena;*

*Despicere*

*Despicere unde queas alios; passimque  
videre*

*Errare, atque viam palanteis qua-  
rere vita.*

But now if we consider the advantage we shall have in the other life by our affection to *Sciences*, and conversation with them in this, it is wonderful great. Indeed that affection is so necessary, as without it we shall enjoy little contentment in all the knowledge we shall then be replenished with: for every ones pleasure in the possession of a good, is to be measured by his precedent *Desire* of that good, and by the equality of the taste and relish of him that feedeth upon it. We should therefore prepare and make our taste before-hand by Assuefaction unto, and by often relishing what we shall then be nourished with. That *Englishman* that can drink nothing but *Beer* or *Ale*, would be ill bestead, were he to go into *Spain* or *Italy*, where nothing but *Wine* groweth:

groweth : whereas a well-experienced *Goinfre* , that can criticize upon the several tastes of Liquors, would think his *Palate* in *Paradise*, among those delicious *Nectars* (to use *Aretines* phrase upon his eating of a *Lamprey*. ) Who was ever delighted with *Tobacco* the first time he took it ? And who could willingly be without it , after he was a while habituated to the use of it ? How many examples are there daily of young men , that marrying upon their Fathers command, not through precedent affections of their own , have little comfort in worthy and handsome Wives, that others would passionately affect ? *Archimedes* lost his life, for being so ravished with the delight of a Mathematical Demonstration, that he could not of a sudden recal his extasied *Spirits* to attend the rude Souldiers Summons : But instead of him, whose mind hath been always fed with such subtil *Diet* ; how many plain *Country-Gentlemen* doth your Lordship and I know, that  
rate

rate the knowledge of their Husbandry at a much higher pitch ; and are extreamly delighted by conversing with that ; whereas the other would be most tedious and importune to them ? We may then safely conclude , That if we will joy in the *Knowledge* we shall have after *Death* , we must in our lifetime raise within our selves earnest affections to it , and desires of it, which cannot be barren ones ; but will press upon us to gain some Knowledge by way of advance here ; and the more we attain unto, the more we shall be in *Love* with what remaineth behind. To this reason then adding the other, How knowledge is the surest prop, and guide of our present life ; and how it perfecteth a man in that which constituteth a man , his *Reason* ; and how it enableth him to tread boldly , steadily, constantly, and knowingly in all his ways : And I am confident , all men that shall hear the Case thus debated, will joyn with me in making it



a Suit to our *Physician*, that he will keep his *Books* open, and continue that *Progress* he hath so happily begun.

But I believe your Lordship will scarcely joyn with him in his wish, that we might procreate and beget Children without the help of Women, or without any Conjunction or Commerce with that sweet and bewitching *Sex*. *Plato* taxeth his fellow *Philosopher* (though otherwise a learned and brave man) for not sacrificing to the *Graces*, those gentle Female *Goddesses*. What thinketh your Lordship of our *Physicians* bitter censure of that action, which *Mahomet* maketh the Essence of his *Paradise*? Indeed, besides those his unkindnesses, or rather frowardnesses, at that tender-hearted *Sex* (which must needs take it ill at his hands) methinketh he setteth Marriage at too low a rate, which is assuredly the highest and divinest link of humane Society. And where he speaketh of *Cupid*, and of *Beauty*, it is in such

a phrase, as putteth me in mind of the Learned Greek Reader in Cambridge, his courting of his Mistress out of Stephens his *Treasurer*.

My next Observation upon his Discourse, draweth me to a *Logical* consideration of the Nature of an exact *Syllogism*: which kind of reflection, though it use to open the door in the course of Learning and Study; yet it will near shut it in my Discourse, which my following the thread that my *Author* spinneeth, assigneth to this place. If he had well and thoroughly considered all that is required to that strict way of managing our *Reason*, he would not have censured *Aristotle* for condemning the fourth Figure, out of no other motive, but because it was not consonant to his own Principle; that it would not fit with the Foundations himself had laid; though it do with Reason (saith he) and be consonant to that, which indeed it doth not, at all times, and in all Circumstances.

B b 4

cumstances. In a perfect *Syllogism*, the Predicate must be identified with the Subject, and each extremum with the middle term, and so consequently, all three with one another. But in *Galen's* fourth Figure, the case may so fall out, as these Rules will not be current there.

As for the good and excellency that he considereth in the worst things, and how far from Solitude any man is in a Wilderness; *These* are ( in his Discourse ) but *equivocal considerations of Good*, and of *Lowliness* : Nor are they any ways pertinent to the Morality of that part, where he treateth of them.

I have much ado to believe, what he speaketh confidently, That he is more beholding to *Morpheus*, for Learned and Rational, as well as pleasing *Dreams*, than to *Mercury* for smart and facetious Conceptions, whom *Saturn* (it seemeth by his relation) hath looked askint upon in his Geniture.

In

In his concluding *Prayer*, where-  
in he summeth up all he wisheth ;  
methinketh his Arrow is not winged  
with that fire, which I should have  
expected from him upon this oc-  
casion: For it is not the peace of  
*Conscience*, nor the bridling up of  
ones affections, that expresseth  
the highest delightfulness and hap-  
piest state of a perfect *Christian*.  
It is love onely that can give us  
*Heaven* upon Earth, as well as in  
*Heaven* ; and bringeth us thither  
too : So that the *Thuscan Virgil* had  
reason to say,

— *In alte dolcezze*

*Non si puo gioio, se non amando.*

And this Love must be imploy-  
ed upon the noblest and highest  
Object, not terminated in our  
Friends. — But of this transcendent  
and divine part of *Charity*, that  
looketh directly and immediately  
upon God himself ; and that is  
the *Intrinscal Form*, the utmost  
Perfection, the scope and final Pe-  
riod

riod of true Religion, ( this Gentleman intended *Theam* , as I conceive ) I have no occasion to speak any thing, since my *Author* doth but transiently mention it ; and that too, in such a phrase as ordinary *Catechisms* speak of to vulgar Capacities.

Thus , my Lord , having run through the Book ( God knows how sleightly, upon so great a sudden ) which your Lordship commanded me to give you an account of, there remaineth yet a weightier task upon me to perform ; which is, to excuse my self of Presumption , for daring to consider any Moles in that Face , which you had marked for a Beauty. But who shall well consider my manner of proceeding in these Remarks, will free me from that Censure. I offer not at *Judging* the Prudence and Wisdom of this Discourse : These are fit Inquiries for your Lordships Court of highest Appeal : In my inferiour one , I meddle onely with little boitt  
knotty

knotty pieces of particular Sciences (*Matina apis instar, operosa parvus carmina fingit.*) In which it were peradventure a fault for your Lordship to be too well versed; your Employments are of a higher and nobler *Strain*, and that concerns the welfare of millions of men;

*Tu regere Imperio Populos (Sackville) memento*  
(*Hæ tibi erunt Artes*) *pacisque imponere morem.*

Such little Studies as these, belong onely to those Persons that are low in the Rank they hold in the Commonwealth; low in their Conceptions, and low in a languishing and rusting Leisure, such an one as *Virgil* calleth *Ignobile otium*, and such an one as I am now dulled withal. If *Alexander* or *Cæsar* should have commended a tract of Land, as fit to fight a Battel in for the Empire of the World, or to build a City upon, to be the *Magazine* and Staple of all the adjacent



cent Countries ; no body could justly condemn that Husbandman, who according to his own narrow Art and Rules , should censure the Plains of *Arbela* , or *Pharsalia* , for being in some places sterile ; or the Meadows about *Alexandria* , for being sometimes subject to be overflowed ; or could tax ought he should say in that kind for a contradiction unto the others commendations of those places, which are built upon higher and larger Principles.

So ( my Lord ) I am confident I shall not be reproached of unmannerliness for putting in a Demurrer unto a few little particularities in that noble Discourse, which your Lordship gave a general Applause unto ; and by doing so , I have given your Lordship the best Account I can of my self, as well as of your Commands. You hereby see what my entertainments are , and how I play away my time.

*Dorset*

—Dorset dum magnus ad al-  
tum

*Fulminat Oxonium bello , victorq;  
volentes*

*Per populos dat jura ; viamq; affe-  
ctat Olympo.*

May your Counsels there be  
happy and successful ones, to bring  
about that *Peace* , which if we be  
not quickly blessed withal, a gene-  
ral ruine threatneth the whole  
*Kingdom*. From *Winchester-house*  
the 22 (I think I may say the 23, for  
I am sure it is Morning, and I think  
it is Day) of *December*, 1642.

Your Lordships most humble

and obedient Servant,

*Kenelm Digby.*

---

The

371

Reignio Medicis

1667



## The Postscript.

My Lord,

**L**ooking over these loose Papers to point them, I perceive I have forgotten what I promised in the eighth sheet, to touch in a word concerning Grace: I do not conceive it to be a Quality infused by God Almighty into a Soul.

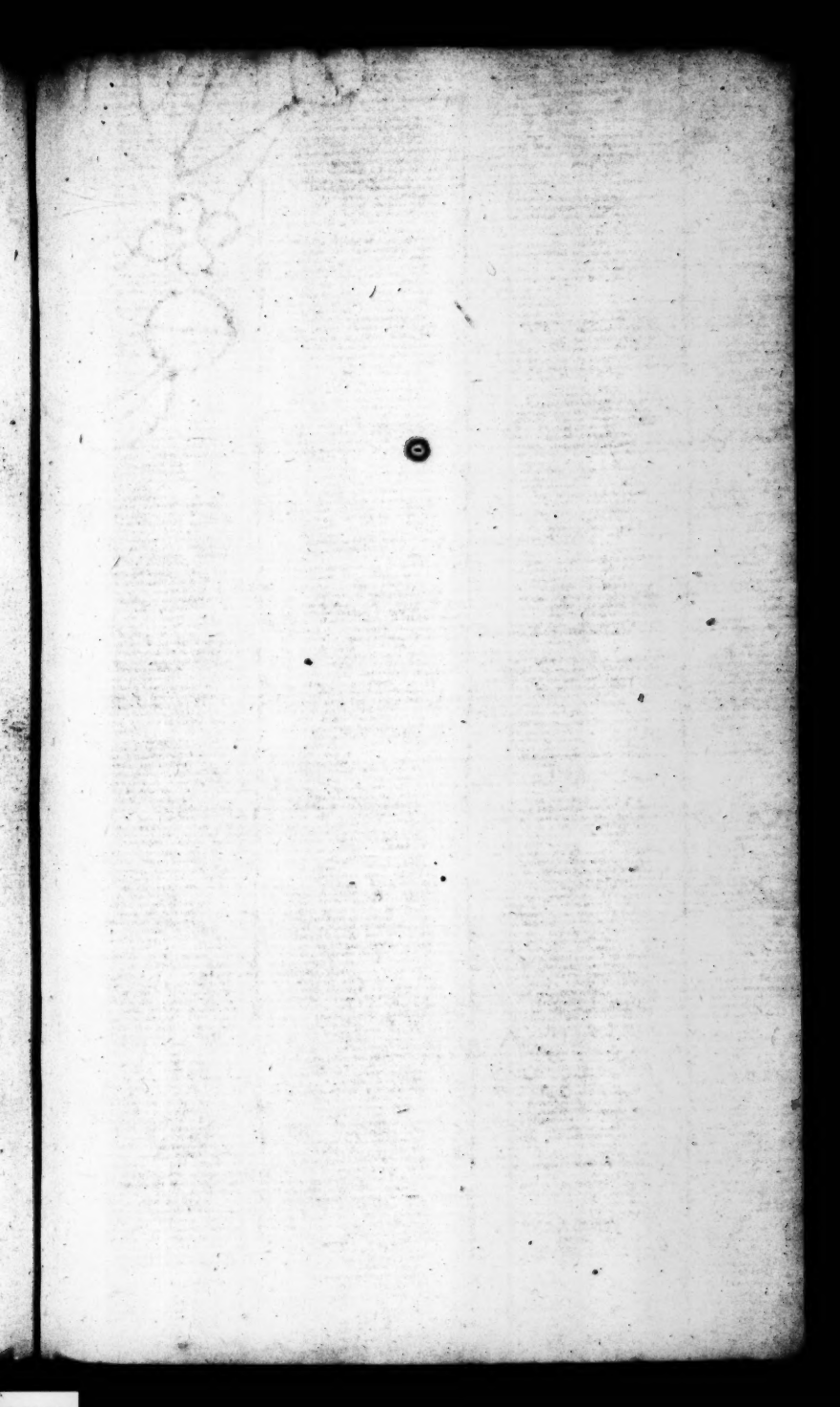
Such kind of discoursing satisfieth me no more in Divinity, than in Philosophy. I take it to be the whole Complex of such real motives (as a solid account may be given of them) that incline a man to Virtue and Piety; and are set on foot by Gods particular Grace and Favour, to bring that work to pass. As for Example: To a man plunged

## The Postscript.

*in Sensuality, some great misfortune happeneth, that mouldeth his heart to a tenderneß, and inclineth him to much thoughtfulness: In this temper, he meeteth with a Book or Preacher, that representeth lively to him the danger of his own condition, and giveth him hopes of greater contentment in other Objects, after he shall have taken leave of his former beloved Sins. This begetteth further conversation with prudent and pious men, and experienced Physicians, in curing the Soules Maladies; whereby he is at last perfectly converted, and settled in a course of solid Vertue and Piety.*

*Now these accidents of his misfortune, the gentleness and softneß of his Nature, his falling upon a good Book, his encountring with a pathetick Preacher, the impremeditated Chance that brought him to hear his Sermon, his meeting with other worthy men, and the whole Concatenation of all the intervening Accidents, to work this good effect in him; and that were ranged and disposed from all Eternity, by Gods particular goodness and providence for his*  
Sal-







Note. See (in this edition) p. 54. L. 7; P. 56  
L. 27; P. 94 L. 3 P. 123, L. 30

"with a few altered readings pointed out  
by Barrow —"

vol. iv, & Martin Reliquiae Medici &  
other Works. Oxford 1964

Bibliographical on 1678 Ed. London, Seal,  
Basset, etc.

Greenhill W. A (1861) says:-

A reprint of I (ie. the Sixth Edition 1669  
London, Crooke) with the usual frontispiece,  
and several alterations in the text, some of  
which may have been accidental, while  
others can hardly have been made during the  
Author's life without his authority. (See Note  
below) It omits "A. B.'s" Address, "To  
such as have," etc and is called "The  
Seventh Edition, corrected and amended;"  
it ends on p 374 (Trin Coll. Dublin.)